

# 템펠

파그마의 후예

MAYA & MARU GAME FANTASY STORY

박새날 게임 판타지 장편소설

마루&마야

# Overgeared

– 템빨 –

- Part 15 -

-Author-  
Park Saenal

[ Rainbow Turtle (Wuxiaworld) ]

# Chapter 651

"There are 10,000 armored elite troops?"

"Yes, that's right."

"This is bad."

Scott grabbed his forehead after receiving the scout's report.

Armored elite troops. They were an elite army created by pouring Ares' 'Fostering Strong Soldiers' skill and the capital of the royal family. They trained from the beginning with the motto 'the Saharan Empire is the enemy' and their strength was real. They mastered various skills, including advanced riding skills that were difficult to obtain. They actually had a great record in the war with the empire.

'The king must be very angry. I wasn't expecting him to dispatch such strong troops.'

He thought they would leave them in order to respond to any attack from the Saharan Empire.

'Indeed... They won't have to worry about an empire raid if they overpower us quickly.'

The number of troops currently in the Ares Army broke a player's common sense. It was a huge 30,000. It was three times larger than the armored elite troops. But that wasn't comforting.

'The average of the newly recruited troops after the war with the empire is only 170. On the other hand, the average level of the armoured elite troops has risen to 290 since the war.'

The 30,000 soldiers would just be good prey for the armored elite troops.

'The soldiers are a poison rather than a help. The level of the armored elite troops will rise in real time during the war and will get out of control.'

Just like in the war against the empire.

One of the resources that Ares gave to the armored elite troops was to recover all their resources during a level up. This would exert tremendous havoc in a war. They would become stronger when fighting battles. The modifier 'undead army' could be attached to them.

'It is better to confront the armored elite troops with a handful of elite soldiers. We will use guerilla warfare.'

He was referring to the Ares Army.

Ares Army. A guild with Ares as the master, there was a total of 200 members. Apart from 28 production classes, the remaining personnel all had combat classes and their average level exceeded 300.

'On the other hand, the armored elite troops haven't reached their third advancement yet. If I add the 162 members of Overgeared, we should be able to tie their feet for a while.'

Four days. Four days later, Ares' Fostering Strong Soldiers would be activated again. They would win if they could buy time until then. Scott was convinced and then he heard a new report.

"The reinforcements from the Overgeared Guild have arrived. H-However."

"However?"

"T-That... There are only five people."

"What?"

Scott's face distorted like a demon.

"Those fools!"

They arranged for this situation to happen in order to establish the alliance, only to not send enough power?

'It is a plan to weaken our forces while building the alliance!'

Anger started to rise in Scott's heart. The Overgeared Guild. He never thought that a

group claiming to have the strongest players in the world would be third-rate people like this.

‘It’s frustrating to know that the people we are allied with aren’t trustworthy.’

Scott clicked his tongue and headed for the VIP room. He took a deep breath in front of the door and controlled his mind. It was an effort to suppress his anger.

‘I can’t leave any flaws in Ares’ honor.’

Ares asked him to treat the guests well. It didn’t matter if they didn’t respond equally. Scott barely suppressed his anger and knocked on the door of the VIP room. At that moment.

“Come in.”

‘What?’

Scott doubted his ears as he heard a woman’s voice coming from the VIP room. It was charming and attractive. It was the voice of the famous Jishuka.

‘Godly archer...!’

The actions she showed during the Eternal War were overwhelming. She was unmatched in large-scale battles. She was one of the few people Ares admired, as well as Grid and Kraugel.

‘Even if there are only five people, the story is different if there is the expert archer.’

It was fortunate. The Overgeared Guild wasn’t completely third-rate. Scott opened the door to the VIP room.

“Welcome...”

The moment he was about to sincerely greet the Overgeared members.

“Nice to meet you.”

He saw a man with shoulders broad enough to cover half the window. A black-haired man with an impressive nose, sharp eyes and high forehead.

“Overgeared King...!”

It was Grid. The person who broke the sky and eventually became the first player to sit on the throne. He was part of the reinforcements that the Overgeared Guild sent.

‘How?’

A legendary blacksmith and king. Out of the two billion users, Grid should be the busiest person right now. He was a star in the sky, just like Ares. He wasn’t someone who could be met easily. He came directly to the Ares Army who formed a temporary alliance out of necessity.

It was something that couldn’t be imagined. Grid laughed at Scott, who was baffled before he met a big shot without any preparations.

“I’m glad that you have accepted the alliance. I want to give a small gift as a memento.

“A small... Gift?”

Scott asked after hearing Grid’s words. Grid asserted confidently.

"I will deal with half of the enemies who invaded your territory within two days."

“...Hat!”

Scott unintentionally laughed. Grid was too naive.

‘Doesn’t he understand the situation?’

The power of the Ares Army must be roughly known by the Overgeared Guild.

‘He saw that we couldn’t prevent the advance of the royal army so shouldn’t he be aware of the situation?’

Was the big shot Grid so lacking in wits?

‘No, it’s impossible. It must be a joke.

Grid didn’t really think he could deal with the army. Scott smiled as he was confident that he grasped the person called Grid.

"It would be really dependable if you could halve the royal army in 30 hours. I really 'will believe in you.'"

"Really."

"Hmmm, okay. You will do it."

"Yes. Point out the unit that you want me to handle."

Currently, the royal army had split into eight and were advancing. Some of them were particularly difficult to deal with. Scott picked four units and pointed them out.

"The 1st, 3rd, 4th and 6th battalions of the armored elite troops are especially outstanding. Their average level is the same as the other battalions, but their combat ability is outstanding. They don't just rely on brute force. Their tactics are very sharp."

Right now, the routes chosen by the four battalions were very tough. They were areas that would be heard for the Ares Army to reach. But Grid didn't seem to know the circumstances of the Ares Army.

"Okay. Let me handle it."

Grid nodded as he prepared to leave. The silently watching Jishuka, Pon, Regas, and Euphemina all rose from their seats after him.

Scot was once again surprised.

'Pon and Regas?'

He had been so overwhelmed by Grid's presence that he hadn't looked around. He only saw Pon and Regas now.

'The Overgeared King, the divine archer, the white horse prince, and the asura... If Yura and Katz were here, then it would be the Overgeared Guild's best power.'

Perhaps Grid's confidence in handling half of the royal army in two days wasn't baseless. Grid, Jishuka, Pon, and Regas all had experience with large wars. In particular, Grid had confronted 100,000 enemies alone. From their viewpoint, 10,000 troops might seem ridiculous.

‘They will soon realize their mistake.’

The armored elite troops weren’t usual soldiers. Every one of them was as powerful as a ranker and their ability to move in an army was greater than the top rankers. The godly archer Jishuka who burned the whole battlefield by summoning a red phoenix? It couldn’t be used against all the armored elite soldiers. Grid, Pon, and Regas weren’t worth comparing to Jishuka when it came to large-scale battles. They wouldn’t be able to perform well and would sooner or later be pushed back.

‘But that is enough.’

They only needed to buy time until Ares’ Fostering Strong Soldiers skill was activated.

‘Four days later, we can defeat the armored elite troops and induce a ceasefire.’

While the Belto Kingdom was recovering from the damage, they would lay the foundations for strengthening their army and occupy the Belto Kingdom with Ares’ power. Scott was convinced. His eyes shone with strong confidence as he dreamt of a radiant future.

However, Grid misunderstood.

‘We seem to be reliable. The vision of Ares’ number two is very high.’

Grid smiled with satisfaction.



"Grid? Jishuka? Pon? Regas?"

Luck’s eyes gleamed as he checked the list of reinforcements from Overgeared.

"The founding heroes of the Overgeared Guild? What a surprise?"

The form of the alliance proposed by the Overgeared members was very unpleasant. It was because Luck felt they were puppets who were forced to accept the alliance due to the situation created by the Overgeared Guild. Luck thought that the alliance with Overgeared wouldn’t last long. He wanted to overcome this crisis and destroy the alliance.



However, the details of the members sent by the Overgeared Guild were too flashy. He didn't like the way this alliance was proposed, but he felt proud that the Overgeared Guild was taking it seriously.

"The Overgeared Guild wouldn't dare jeopardize this. They won't stab us in the back while the empire is still strong."

It was Scott's thoughts and Luck agreed.

"It should be fine. The problem is that the empire will always be strong."

Luck clearly realized that the empire was on another dimension after the war. The power of the contemporary Red Knights was much stronger than predicted and the 1st knight was overwhelming.

'I can't compete from the 5th knight onwards.'

From the 4th knight, it was like meeting a wall. Then the third knight was on a completely different dimension. They could easily overpower Kraugel in his prime with only one hand.

"Anyway, the most curious thing is the ability of the Overgeared Guild's founding heroes."

How long could they hold out against the armored elite troops? Luck decided that it would be three days. Of course, this was just a story of one battalion.

'If they use guerrilla warfare well and drag out the time...'

Luck and Scott were looking forward to seeing it. Then the two of them saw the guild chat window.

@ The third armored elite troops battalion...!!

"What?"

It had been less than half a day since they received news that Grid arrived. Luck and Scott didn't understand and asked at the same time.

@ Did Jishuka's red phoenix work on the armored elite troops?

@ Did Grid summon two red phoenixes?

No, it wasn't just that. It was highly likely that Grid, Jishuka, Pon, and Regas all poured out their ultimate skills.

'But even so... '

To defeat one battalion of armored elite troops in half a day... Scott and Luck couldn't understand it. Then a shocking answer arrived.

@ No, Grid summoned four red phoenixes!

@ Yes, four...

@ ... Red phoenixes?

# Chapter 652

"Four red phoenixes... The God's Command ability again?"

The information network of the Ares Army was excellent. Unlike Grid, who lacked information gathering capacity, Ares' information gathering power was at the level of the highest players and the Ares Army knew about the '7 malignant episodes.'

Three top-rated passive attack skills, three passive defense skills, and the corrupt passive could be acquired from the 7 malignant episodes. The Ares Army didn't know exactly how to acquire the seven skills, but they could infer how the skills worked. Due to this, they discovered that Grid had God's Command. It was because he used his ultimate skill two consecutive times during the Belial raid and summoned four red phoenixes during the war against Eternal.

'But isn't God's Command activated on a probability?'

Grid seemed to trigger God's Command too often. It was almost at the level of activating to his will.

'Is he wearing an item that increases his good luck stat?'

'Or his natural luck is too good.'

Scott and Luck were questioning this when new reports came from the guild members monitoring Grid's battle.

@ Grid summoned another two red phoenixes...! It's a total of six red phoenixes!

"?!?!"

"Didn't he already use God's Command when he summoned four?"

Scott and Luck replayed the video of the Eternal battle. It was in order to determine Grid's combat capabilities.

'Two of the four golden hands turned into two bows.'

‘One of them was used by Grid and the other was used by the remaining two golden hands.’

‘Wait...’

‘...Is it possible to turn all four hands into bows?’

They thought about it.

“Crazy...!”

Scott and Luck got goosebumps. In particular, Luck received a huge impact. Why? Luck had been evaluating Grid at a level similar to himself.

‘But I was wrong.’

Grid was above him. Luck realized this and could only laugh.

‘Kraugel, is this your rival?’



Bultail Plains. It was a meadow with small rocks as obstacles. It was a space that could maximize the strength of the armored elite troops, who had the options of ‘increase speed and agility on flat ground’ and ‘additional attack power when charging 100 meters.’ The armored elite troops were overflowing with confidence. They were confident that they could even win against the empire if it was on this vast plains.

"During the march, no rebel will be able to block our way."

The leader of the armored elite troops 3rd Battalion, Pastano. Confidence filled the dark blue eyes that could be seen through matted hair. He believed that his 3rd Battalion would be the first to arrive at the castle of the rebel Duke Ares and that he would be awarded with the greatest achievement.

“Duke Ares... I once thought of him as a mentor, but not anymore.”

He was certain that he had transcended Ares. But Ares was an object of admiration and Pastano never had a chance to challenge Ares, making him feel regret.

'That changed a few days ago.'

Pastano was extremely delighted when he heard that Duke Ares was looking to overthrow the royal family. Pastano wanted to demonstrate his capabilities to the kingdom.

"Ares...! Become the cornerstone of my reputation!"

Pastano shouted as loudly as possible as he charged towards where Ares was hiding. The speed of his horse was much faster than usual. He inserted a ghost into the horse, insuring it was never tired and was fearless.

"Kuahahaha! Forward! Shoot!"

Pastano led 2,500 armored elite troops across the plains. He imagined himself burning the capital of the Ares Duchy that he would arrive at in two days, only to frown.

'What?'

One person stood in the path of the advancing armored elite troops. No, it was unclear if it was a person. Pastano couldn't identify the target since he was too far away.

'Monster?'

No human would willingly stand in the path of an army consisting of thousands. Pastano decided that the being in the distance was a monster and cried out.

"Step on it!"

"Yes!"

Pastano commanded and the armoured elite troops replied. Their voices filled the sky as the strong legs of their horses stirred the earth.

"Fly Up!"

*Kiyaaaaaaack!*

The presence, who they thought was a monster, shouted and pulled a gleaming golden bow.

"?"

Why was he shouting alone? The armored elite troops flinched but didn't stop moving. However, they were forced to stop. It was because they witnessed a bird flying in the blue sky. A fiery bird. The legendary sacred creature, a red phoenix. The size was so big that it covered a portion of the sky.

"Heeok?"

"W-What is this?"

The surprised Pastano and the armored elite troops reflexively slowed their pace, and this was a huge mistake.

"Fly Up!"

The person shouted once again and pulled the bow.

*Kiyaaaaack!*

"What?"

Another phoenix showed up in the sky.

"What is this?"

"S-Summoning a red phoenix!"

"This is ridiculous...!"

The armored elite troops were still human. They had to lose their cool when something didn't make sense. Pastano tried to calm the confused troops.

"Keep your minds steady! We are the great armored elite troops! We won't be fooled by this trick!"

The person who summoned the phoenixes were likely to be subordinates of Ares. But when he thought calmly, there was no reason to be afraid. It didn't make sense that a human could summon the legendary red phoenix. That's right. Pastano judged that the two phoenixes in the sky were a trick. It was a last hurrah from Ares to tie up their

feet.

"Rush in at full force! Trample on the fool who dares try to deceive us and burn all of Ares' lands!"

"Waaahhhhhhhh!"

The armored elite troops regained their composure at Pastano's command and their horses started running again. However, it was already too late. The man in the distance pulled out two more golden bows and fired them.

"Fly Up!"

*Kiiiiiiing!*

*Hwaruruk!*

".....!!"

Even the sun was swallowed. Four red phoenixes appeared in the sky, their blazing bodies covering the whole sky. Now it wasn't sunshine but flames that lit up the grasslands.

"Four red..."

"Phoenixes...!!"

Pastano and the armored elite troops were shocked. To be honest, they were completely scared. It might be a trick, but the heat of the flames could be felt on their skin. The soldiers were confused, but narrowed the distance without stopping. Then the man below the four phoenixes gave them even greater despair.

"Two more! Fly Up!"

God's Command. In the process of transforming the four God Hands into the Red Phoenix Bows and using it four times, Grid's God's Command skill was activated twice. It was only a half chance. Thanks to this, six red phoenixes filled the sky and the sum of their power overtook the Fly Up! of the myth rated Red Phoenix Bow.

*Kurururung!*

Fire fell indefinitely. The green plains burned instantly.

“Uwaaaaack!”

“H-Help me...! Hiiik!”

The flames that wouldn't go out. The world had nothing to fear as the armored elite troops burned.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

“...Eh?”

Grid gained five levels from wiping out less than 3,000 troops? It was unforgettable experience. The bewildered Grid finally noticed.

"Are they actually high level soldiers?"

“...”

The members of the Ares Army were silent as they watched Grid. Their lives seemed to be in vain after seeing Grid kill the armored elite troops so easily.

‘An ignorant and uncouth human...’

‘He seems to be as strong as Ares?’

How frightening would he be when he became their enemy later?!



“Eh?”

The shocked Ares members regained their senses. It was because a survivor appeared in the 3rd Battalion, who they thought had been wiped out. It was the 3rd Battalion's leader, Pastano. He survived the constant rain of fire, showing that the battalion leaders were on a different dimension.

“You! Who are you?”

A leader who lost his troops would be condemned. Yes, Pastano had lost everything. His honor, power, and status. He was forced to give up his ambitions and only had rage left.

“I will kill you! I will kill you!”

*Kuaaah!*

Pastano roared and shot towards Grid. He was able to reach 100 meters in an instant and got additional charging power, showing a fearsome sight. A cavalry's dash was said to be more powerful than anything else and Pastano's force was terrifying. But distinct strengths always had a weakness. The cavalry's dash attack was in a straight line, which meant it was vulnerable to a counterattack.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship, Revolve.”

*Kwajajajak!*

“...!!”

Pastano's chest armor was breached. The +7 Sword Ghost moved in a circle and turned Pastano's attack back on him.

“Cough!”

Pastano felt great confusion as he was injured.

‘He wasn't a summoner?’

The black-haired man in front of him had summoned six legendary red phoenixes. Pastano didn't know how he summoned sacred creatures, but he was sure that this

man was a summoner. If Pastano could narrow the distance, the man would be easily suppressed. But what was this?

“Swordsmanship... How can a summoner use a sword? Cough, cough!”

A fatal blow had been dealt to Pastano. Grid tried to show mercy to him who was bleeding. It was the mercy of death, which would free Pastano from suffering.

“Now I will be killed by a summoner? How can I lose my manliness?”

*Chaaeng!*

“...!!”

Grid was surprised while aiming for Pastano’s neck. It was because Pastano blocked his attack with a spear.

‘His reactions aren’t dull?’

Pastano had been hit by the six phoenixes. His health gauge was extremely low and his whole body was injured. A normal humanoid NPC wouldn’t be able to stand up in this state. Yet Pastano moved quickly and precisely defended against Grid’s attack.

‘This is enough!’

He had gained five levels from the armoured elite troops. The level of their leader shouldn’t be low. In addition, the reason they could be so strong was purely because of Ares. Grid once again felt afraid of Ares. The power of Ares as an individual hadn’t yet been grasped, but the strength of the army he created was amazing. He wanted to avoid a war with the Ares Army.

“Ohhh!”

*Chaaeng! Chaaeng!*

Pastano roared and attacked Grid. But his remaining health was too low. He died the moment Grid struck him twice. Grid was once again shocked.

[The leader of the armored elite troops 3rd Battalion, Pastano, has been defeated!]

[The armored elite troops are burning with desire for revenge against you! The armored elite troops will exert more power when facing you in the future!]

"Wow."

He got a penalty instead of a reward? The Ares troops came over to the baffled Grid and explained.

"This is the characteristic of those who have been given leadership by Ares."

"Those who are strong enough to kill Ares' commanders..."

"The Ares Army's potential will explode against them."

"Kraugel was a victim of this."

The intentions of the Ares members' explanation to Grid was simple. They wanted him to feel fear. Grid's response was beyond the expectations of the Ares troops.,

"The penalty obtained from killing the battalion leader has no meaning to me. I don't intend to meet the armored elite troops again in the future."

"...?"

"My colleagues will kill the remaining armored elite troops."

Grid's meaning was also very simple. The penalty incurred by killing Ares' commanders? He wasn't afraid because of his strong colleagues.

The two forces had already started their war of nerves.

# Chapter 653

Pured Bridge.

It was a bridge crossing a river that was bigger than a lake. It belonged to the Belto Kingdom and was one of the core transportation routes. It was called the 'immortal bridge' because it never collapsed.

*Dudududududu!*

There were 300 horses marching on the bridge. There were so many that a person had to stare closely at the legs to find out that there were 300 horses. It was the armored elite troops' 4th Battalion.

"Speed up!"

The 4th Battalion's specialty was to be swift and surprising. It was in order to supplement the disadvantage of having low numbers.

"Quickly occupy the watchtower at the end of the bridge!"

If their surprise attack was exposed by the enemy guarding the watchtower, things could become annoying. Bocard, leader of the 4th Battalion, believed this and prompted the soldiers. The soldiers responded to his expectations by using advanced skills. Immediately crossing the bridge, they narrowed the distance to the tower to three meters and leapt from their saddle. It was a perfect jump without a loss of balance!

*Chwaruruk!*

They threw chains that wrapped around the pillars of the watchtower.

"Enemy...! Eek!"

The Ares soldiers on the watchtower detected it too late and died. It was right to say that they lost their lives the moment they discovered the enemy. The 4th Battalion was extremely stealthy and quick.

"The enemy!"

The guards weren't aware of the enemy's intrusion until half their defense had disappeared. By then, it was too late. The armored elite troops had already climbed up the chains and were running wild in the watchtower.

"Set a fire! We must inform the others of the enemy's intrusion!"

The Pured Bridge was in a fully exposed location so it was easy to monitor. That's why the defense became conceited. They never imagined the armored elite troops would break through here and were too relaxed. Pured's defense leader tried to set a signal fire. But the armored elite troops wouldn't let him. He was quickly suppressed by the soldiers and the fire put out. The defense chief on the ground discovered Bocard.

"Right now, you are using Duke Ares' techniques! If it wasn't for Duke Ares, you wouldn't exist! How dare you sprinkle blood on Duke Ares' land?"

"The reason we trained with Duke Ares was for the royal family. Duke Ares was a great general and teacher, but he's a traitor for betraying the royal family."

[Quest failed!]

[You have failed to convince 4th Battalion's Captain Bocard!]

[Retreat from Pured Bridge! Make sure Duke Ares knows about the enemy's intrusion!]

'Shit!'

The Pured Bridge's defense chief was a player of the Ares Army, Baphrang. In fact, he had been disappointed in his role in this war. He was asked to guard the bridge that the enemy would never attack, so he felt like he had been relegated to the periphery. He felt it was unfair because he wouldn't have a chance to build up achievements. But now his role was very important.

'It's over if they break through here.'

Pured Bridge was the shortest route to reach Ares' city. What if he gave way to the enemy here? Ares would be surprised without a chance to properly defend.

'It's dangerous. Somehow I have to pass the news to Ares!'

If he used the guild chat or whisper system then he could easily tell Ares about the enemy's invasion. But the problem was that a quest was currently in progress. The moment that armored elite troops, Baphrang, received the penalty of having all ranged communications blocked. He had to run directly to the castle.

"Hat!"

Baphrang jumped off the watchtower. A man in heavy armor jumping out of a six meter high tower? He would surely be injured by the fall effect. But Baphrang was a third advancement user and had good control. He used a charge just before his two feet neared the ground, twisted the orbit of his body and countered gravity.

However, he couldn't escape. It was because Bocard predicted Baphrang's landing point and threw a spear.

*Puok!*

"Kuock!"

Bocard was a master of the spear. The spear he threw penetrated Baphrang's heart and dealt a critical injury. Baphrang lost one third of his health at once. This wasn't the end.

*Kwajijjik!*

Lightning emerged from Bocard's spear. Baphrang was damaged by the lightning and received the additional status of being stunned.

'Damn bastards!'

Baphrang couldn't move. Due to the electric shock, he couldn't drink potions and could only watch as the armored elite troops rushed towards him.

'It is the end!'

Baphrang saw his death and closed his eyes. The frustration he felt was very big. If he died here, he was likely to be blamed and expelled from the Ares Army. His splendid future guaranteed in the Ares Army would disappear.

‘XX! If only I was alert!’

He would’ve discovered the enemy more quickly and would’ve been able to light the signal fire. Baphrang felt regret. He listened to the sound of the hooves approaching and was ready to die. He gave up on his brilliant future. It was a hell-like moment. Then at that moment...

*Kururung!*

A lightning bolt fell from the clear sky. It was a huge and intensely destructive lightning bolt that couldn’t be compared to Bocard’s lightning spear.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

The sound tore at their ears.

“...!?”

The armored elite troops were shocked due to the lightning bolt that fell at close range. They stopped the spears aiming at Baphrang and spread out in different directions. It was an instinctive survival need that drove their actions.

*Gulp!*

There was silence for a while. There was only the sound of the armored elite troops gulping. The armored elite troops doubted their eyes. It was due to the light on the ground. That’s right. The lightning bolt that fell from the sky didn’t disappear. The intense presence still existed on the ground. But the more surprising thing...

*Pajik!*

*Pajijjik!*

The still lightning started to move.

‘What is this?’

The lightning that fell from the sky didn't disappear, but moved by itself? The armored elite troops fell into confusion. They didn't know.

Asura. Out of the hundreds of tens of thousands of martial artists, only one powerhouse succeeded in drawing out the strength of the normal class!

"Regas!"

Baphrang exclaimed.

"Lightning Dragon Ascension!"

*Supak!*

Regas maximized his movement speed and agility as he moved around the armored elite troops.

*Peeng!*

Up!

*Kwajak!*

To the top.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

There was an onslaught every time he instantly appeared. It was an attack speed that couldn't be followed with the eyes. The armored elite troops couldn't react and allowed Regas' attacks.

'I can't...!'

'...Respond!'

*Kwajajajak!*

Regas' fists and feet struck the armored elite troops. There was a thunderous sound every time there was a collision with the armored elite troops and they were caught by the electric shock. The person who appeared at this time was Pon.



"I didn't want to interfere."

The Ares Army would be an enemy in the future. Pon thought it was right to appear after Baphrang died. But Regas was someone who honored the spirit of Taekwondo since he was a child. He couldn't stand back and watch when an ally was in trouble and eventually rescued Baphrang.

"So I listened to him. Well, it's good for you."

The laughing Pon threw a black spear as hard as possible. Then.

*Peeeeeeong!*

It simultaneously pierced the bodies of multiple armored elite troops who were stunned by Regas' attack. It was the power of Mach Spear, which manifested using Belial's Spear that he gained as a national reward. Baphrang couldn't close his mouth.

'Pon and Regas were so strong?'

Of course, Baphrang knew that the Overgeared members were top class. But he looked down on most of them apart from Grid, Yura, Jishuka, and Katz. He was mistaken.

'Regas' swiftness and Pon's damage... It isn't top class in the Overgeared Guild.'

World class.

*Chill.*

Baphrang got goosebumps at the evaluation. Regas approached and held out a hand to him.

"Can you rise?"

"..."

Regas was smiling so happily? Baphrang was embarrassed when meeting Regas' transparent gaze.

'I will be your enemy someday, but you're treating me like a real colleague?'

Baphrang was convinced. It wasn't a coincidence that Regas appeared when he was in a crisis. Regas came to help him.

'How big-hearted is the Overgeared Guild?'

On the other hand, himself? He was too embarrassed to claim himself as Ares' subordinate. He had been disgruntled since being appointed to defend Pured Bridge and didn't fulfill his mission. He didn't think about taking care of his colleagues, only building up his own achievements.

"I am ashamed..."

He would take a leaf out of the Overgeared Guild's book. Baphrang grabbed Regas' hand and got up. His gaze was filled with obvious liking and respect as he looked at Regas.

"How great is Grid that he has people like you as his subordinates...? I can't even guess."

"...?"

Regas was bewildered while Pon was in pain from all his laughing.



@ The 4th Battalion has collapsed under the cooperation of Pon and Regas.

"...?"

The Ares troops received Baphrang's report. The 4th Battalion was a small and elite group. Their ability in guerrilla warfare was very threatening. It wasn't Grid or Jishuka, but Pon and Regas who destroyed them?

"It would be possible if Baphrang efficiently operated the defenses of the Pured Bridge."

Someone guessed and everyone agreed. But Scott and Luck thought differently.

"No, the power of the Overgeared Guild is more than we guessed."

“I think the items they obtained from the great demon raid were much bigger than expected. They’re a lot stronger than what they showed in the Belial raid.”

“Stronger than they were during the Belial raid? Then what type of monster has Jishuka become?”

“Grid is overwhelming in a way. 20,000... No, it’s right to compare her to Ares when Ares managed 30,000 troops.”

“...”

“But that’s the problem. Grid will have great confidence in Jishuka and would tell her to take care of the 1st Battalion.”

“Jishuka will fail her mission and die.”

Unlike the other battalions, the 1st Battalion had several types of soldiers mixed in and their defense was excellent. Jishuka’s red phoenix wouldn’t be able to penetrate the armored elite troops’ defense.

“But it won’t be useless. Her role is to consume the enemy’s stamina.”

“Yes, I expect the same thing. The 1st Battalion will be exhausted dealing with Jishuka and it will be easy for us to handle them afterwards.”

The experience that the 1st Battalion dropped would be theirs. The Ares members were confident of this when a new message appeared in the Ares Army’s guild chat.

@ The 1st Battalion has encountered an Overgeared member. But...

@ What?

@ It’s a girl called Euphemina, not Jishuka...?

@ Euphemina?

@ Who’s that?

“...?”

Why was the development always strange?

# Chapter 654

Duplicator.

It was rare for people to know it, but it was the first hidden class that appeared in Satisfy along with Baal's Contractor and Blood Warrior. If the skill was below the epic rating, it could be unconditionally copied and used like her own skill. It would be used depending on the need.

Once a Duplicator had copied a large number of skills, the combat power and effectiveness that it exerted was the ultimate strength. Even the Overgeared King Grid was convinced he would lose if he fought Euphemina in a perfect state.

"Who is that girl?"

It was the armored elite troops' 1st Battalion. It was the strongest unit of the Belto Kingdom that tied up the feet of the Saharan Empire during the war. They doubted their eyes as they approached the capital of the Ares Duchy. It was because Parklu Fortress, which should be empty after the soldiers retreated, currently had a girl on its walls. She was a cute girl with blonde hair tied up in a ponytail.

"A civilian who didn't escape?"

But that was too confident. She was standing on the walls without holding a white flag in her hand. 1st Battalion chief Zen signalled to the archers.

"Kill her."

Duke Ares was a great person. Any weak person could become a soldier and then a knight under his training. The girl on the wall seemed fragile, but she was likely a secret weapon that Ares raised. The march would be disrupted if he didn't pay attention to any suspicious existences. It was correct to block the unknown variables from the beginning.

*Kkirik!*

The armoured elite archers hesitated for a moment after hearing Zen's command

before drawing their bows. The distance to the wall was 500 meters. The wind direction was also bad. However the armored elite troops had the '80% increase in accuracy with arrows' passive skill. It wasn't too difficult to see the target that was 500 metres away using Hawk Eyes.

*Pak!*

*Pa pa pa pat!*

10 jaffa arrows flew in a parabola. All 10 were capable of hitting the girl on the wall. Everyone foresaw the girl's death. Everyone except for the girl.

"There is a total of 200 archers... I have to defend."

Euphemina used the skill that she copied from Jeff, master of the Zeraph Guild' and first place on the Qigong Master rankings.

"Deny Reason."

One of the ultimate techniques of a third advancement class of a Qigong Master, Defying the Natural Order.

*Paang!*

*Papapapang!*

Hundreds of spheres reminiscent of water droplets appeared around Euphemina. Next.

*Sururuk.*

The 10 arrows that wanted to pierce Euphemina's body were swallowed up by the spheres. It was a force that neutralized all projectiles. The armored elite troops raised their speed.

"Qigong Master!"

"Ranged attacks are futile! Maintain your minds and approach!"

"Shield soldiers stand at the front and archers stop attacking! There's the possibility

of being hit back by those spheres!"

The officers quickly gave commands and the armored elite troops reached the bottom of the wall in an instant. But it was useless. They couldn't threaten Euphemina. They couldn't climb the walls.

"Earthquake. Blizzard. Thunderstorm. Volcano."

"...?!"

"What?"

She was a magician, not a Qigong Master? She was also a magician who unfolded the 'top magic' of four attributes without casting!

"Great magician!"

*Kurururung!*

The earth collapsed.

*Jjejeok!*

*Jjejejejeok!*

The bodies of the armored elite troops were weakened by the freezing snowstorm.

*Kwajik!*

*Pajijijijik—!*

Lightning struck the frozen armored elite troops, dealing critical blows.

Then.

*Kurururung!*

A volcano rose from the collapsed earth and spread magma that was a disaster to the armored elite troops.

“Kuaaaack!”

“How can all these spells be linked...?”

Pandemonium!

The armored elite troops were defenseless against the linked magic. Zen shook his head as he saw his subordinates trying to escape from the volcanic eruption.

‘There’s a great magician among Duke Ares’ people!’

There were many magicians who dealt with all attributes. But they couldn’t use top attribute specific magic, unlike the magicians who concentrated on one attribute. That’s right. The existence of a magician who could cast the top magic of each attribute was called a great magician by the world. The blonde girl might like young and tender, but she was one of the top 10 magicians on the continent.

‘No! More than that!’

A great magician was still a magician. They couldn’t use the techniques of a Qigong Master. The girl first used the skill of a Qigong Master to compensate for the weakness of a great magician. Indeed.

‘...A complete person!’

*Gulp!*

Zen inwardly exclaimed and swallowed his saliva.

“Get off the walls! The hammer troops will smash it down!”

The armored elite troops boasted a strong body. There were seriously injured people from Euphemina’s magic, but there was not one casualty. Once the volcano disappeared, they quickly recovered from their pain and rose again. They used the best skills they had to simultaneously hit the walls. Then.

*Kuuong!*

*Kurururung!*



The wall that Euphemina was on started collapsing and the armored elite troops showed off their agility to avoid the rocks.

*Teook!*

*Tadak!*

The armored elite troops avoided the wreckage of the walls and Euphemina became surrounded by 1,000 of them.

"Die, Witch!"

It was difficult to determine Euphemina's exact identity. They were forced to evaluate her as a monster that transcended human categorization. Heat emerged from the ends of the skys and contained enough force to evaporate the clouds in the sky. However, it wasn't a threat to Euphemina.

"White Light Steps."

*Supaak!*

".....!!"

White Light Steps. It was a skill that was hard to control and achieved its best effect under intense sunlight or clear moonlight. The top footwork skill loved by Kraugel was completely reproduced by Euphemina.

'Gone?'

Zen lost the target. It was like she was a ghost.

"Assist the battalion commander!"

The 200 archers of the battalion had been forced to keep their distance. As soon as they noticed their commander's confusion, they started shooting randomly. They didn't think that Euphemina was still controlling the spheres despite using several magic spells in a row. It was impossible for them to understand the control skills of a genius player, rather than a named NPC.

"No!"

Something could be sensed from Euphemina. Zen cried out with astonishment as he felt hundreds of arrows rising from the ground He knew. The spheres hovering in the air were still under the control of the blonde girl.

*Sururuk.*

*Suruk... sururuk.*

The moment that the arrows were swallowed up by the spheres.

"Sonic Boom."

*Puaaaaaaaaaah!*

It was the ultimate magic of Zednos, the 1st ranked wind magician. The magic was used above Zen's head.

"...!!!"

It was something that human hearing couldn't endure. Zen and the other armored elite troops collapsed to the ground, blood pouring from their ears. The wind pressure that followed crushed the flesh and bones, while the arrows trapped in the spheres flew out.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has ri.....]

...

...

[The leader of the armored elite troops' 1st Battalion, Zen, has been defeated!]

[The armored elite troops are burning with desire for revenge against you! The armored elite troops will exert more power when facing you in the future!]



@ Euphemina is a magician of Overgeared who was active in the Reinhardt golem invasion.

@ Ah... The girl who killed the golems?

The Ares Army had been paying attention to the Overgeared Guild for quite a long time. They glimpsed the potential of Grid and the Overgeared members from the beginning. They watched the battle videos of the golem invasion several times. They couldn't forget the beautiful female magician who had a great influence on the situation at the time.

@ She did an outstanding job of getting rid of the golems, but she couldn't scratch the ancient weapons.

@ She didn't play a big part in the war against the Eternal Kingdom or show a presence in the Belial raid.

@ Her popularity isn't high... Why did Grid send her to the 1st Battalion?

@ It's to buy time. She will tie up the feet of the 1st Battalion while Grid, Jishuka, Regas, and Pon repel the other battalions.

@ Indeed... A magician's wide area magic makes it easy to buy time.

@ The more I know Grid, the more he seems like a loyal person. He's determined to sacrifice his colleagues in order to keep this alliance relationship.

@ Grid cares about popularity. We can trust and rely on him as long as this alliance is maintained.

@ Yes, he's a respectable person.

The Ares troops couldn't deny Grid's charms. They admired Grid's bold determination that allowed him to sacrifice his colleagues for the alliance. They thought that Euphemina was also a big person for believing and sacrificing herself under Grid's

orders.

@ Overgeared Guild... They can't be ignored.

@ The 1st Battalion collapsed...!

@ She's likely to be stronger than Kraugel and Agnus.

@ The 1st Battalion collapsed!

@ It isn't the same level as Agnus. The power of that madman can't be measured at all.

@ It's even more desperate due to all the necromancers following Agnus. Later, the under army led by Agnus alone can approach the hundreds of thousands.

@ The 1st Battalion was wiped out!

"..."

The Ares members in a heated debate simultaneously closed their mouths. It was due to the ridiculous words that appeared in the guild chat window. Someone could no longer overlook it and replied angrily.

@ The 1st Battalion was wiped out? Don't joke around in this atmosphere.

@ We have been overvaluing the Overgeared Guild for a long time.

As the Ares members thought this, a colleague spying on the battlefield of the 1st Battalion sent in the guild chat.

@ It's true! Euphemina wiped out the 1st Battalion alone!

"..."

It was crazy nonsense. Even Jishuka couldn't go against the 1st Battalion alone. There were 2,000 troops, five different types of soldiers, and the balance was excellent. The Saharan Empire's army could be controlled for a while thanks to the efforts of the 1st Battalion. Yet Euphemina wiped them out by herself? In addition...

@ In only 12 minutes?

The report that Euphemina had encountered the 1st Battalion had come exactly 12 minutes ago. The Ares members got a chill down their spines as they confirmed the time.

# Chapter 655

*-I've finished cleaning up the 1st Battalion.*

*"..."*

It was said simply. It was like someone finished cleaning a room. 2,000 elite troops were easily killed. Grid was covered with sweat as he saw the whisper and replied to Euphemina.

*-Are.you.okay??? Was it? hard? You. I. Bothersome. Work? I was worried. (Tone marks: Grid's voice going up and down)*

Of course, Grid cherished all his colleagues. But among them, his feelings towards Euphemina were special. It was a fear of dying. Grid was always nervous and tried not to make any mistakes in front of her. He was like a mouse in front of a beast.

Thus, whenever he talked to Euphemina, it was like he was reading from a bilingual book. Euphemina just thought that Grid was especially kind to her. She had to be equally friendly to Grid.

*-Why is it bothersome? I'm happy to play an active role for the Overgeared Kingdom. Give me many opportunities in the future.*

*-Ah, yes... Y-Yes? I'm thankful for your words. Ha.ha.*

*-But...*

*-Huh?*

*-I think Ares' power is really great. We must be alert.*

Euphemina's voice was heavy. To be honest, she felt a great shock.

*-The armored elite troops... None of them died despite being hit by four S-grade magic spells in succession.* The attributes that Ares gave to the armored elite troops included magic resistance and increased health. What would've happened if one or two healers

were among them?

-... *Granting attributes.*

The value of the information obtained by the Overgeared Guild in this war was very high. The armored elite troops were directly trained by Ares. The number of skills and attributes possessed by the armored elite troops were so varied as to be comparable to named monsters. In many circumstances, Ares seemed to have the ability to forcibly raise the level of his soldiers and to give them skills and attributes.

In other words, it was a scam.

‘Of course, there are likely to be big restraints. But even considering that... ’

Over time, the strength of the Ares Army would increase dramatically. It would be in full swing the moment the Belto Kingdom was occupied.

‘He can constantly produce the best units based on the vast territories, people, and taxes.’

The thought was threatening. The future Ares Army could have military power comparable to the empire. Euphemina was worried about this part.

*-The armored elite troops belong to the Belto royal family. They aren't strictly part of Ares' army. Ares is likely to have trained 'proper' armored elite troops. But based on this... The strength of the army that Ares nurtures with all his heart will exceed our imagination. We shouldn't give Ares time to grow.*

The reason why Grid and Euphemina could take care of the armored elite troops relatively easily was because of their overwhelming attack power. Both of them had legendary rated weapons and used top rated skills in a ‘continuous’ manner, allowing them to kill the armored elite troops. But what if the armored elite troops were more powerful? If they had a few healers like Euphemina said, it was likely that even Grid and Euphemina would be countered by the armored elite troops. Grid and Euphemina wouldn't be able to easily handle the army Ares would raise in the future.

*-It doesn't seem good to maintain this alliance for long. If we hold Ares' hand in fear of the empire, we will be swallowed by Ares.*

-... *I know.*

*-But what can we do?*

*-An alliance with Ares is required in order to survive the empire.*

*-That's right. As Euphemina said, it was dangerous to maintain a long-term alliance with the Ares Army. But.*

Grid spoke as calmly as possible. It was intended to reassure Euphemina.

*-You must not forget about our potential while guarding against the enemy's potential. Don't forget. I'm the Overgeared King. The soldiers of Overgeared are wearing my items and are also strong.*

Yes, there was no need to unnecessarily worry. Being afraid of the future Ares Army? Why? The Overgeared Kingdom would become stronger in the future!

*-The Overgeared Kingdom's army is just as capable as Ares' army. No, they can grow stronger than Ares. So don't be afraid of Ares.*

*-... Indeed. I was too short-sighted.*

Euphemina was relieved as she heard the confidence in Grid's voice. Grid wasn't aware of it, but Euphemina relied on Grid the most.



"The Overgeared Guild? Mmmm, not bad."

As expected, Jishuka wiped out the 6th Battalion. Grid kept his promise of handling the four battalions of armored elite troops within two days. Ares was surprisingly calm after hearing about it.

'It's a natural result given the fact that the battalion commanders in the army aren't good at strategy and tactics.'

The true strength of the army was exerted when led by a superior commander. No matter how powerful the army, they wouldn't be able to exercise their full strength if the commander was incompetent. In that sense, it was the limit of the armored elite troops.



The battalion commanders didn't have a strategy to raise the true strength of the armored elite troops and eventually fought the Overgeared members head on. Then they were obliterated by strength. It was a cheap price.

'It's the commander's capacity that determines the value of the army.'

This was why Ares was careful about recruiting guild members. Unlike the top ranked members of each class, Ares' troops had the ability to command an army, although their combat power might be somewhat lower. Ares chose guild members who had good chemistry with his skills.

"Bring the combat data of the armored elite troops against the Overgeared members. I will train a new army that eliminates the shortcomings and weaknesses of the armored elite troops.

Ares' heart started beating wildly. He was happy when thinking about the large army he could raise using the resources of the Belto Kingdom that would soon fall into his hands.



"You have gone to a lot of trouble."

Scott greeted Grid who returned after taking care of the armored elite troops. His gaze was focused on Euphemina. He was alert despite her cute appearance. Grid couldn't help feeling proud.

'It's natural to be afraid of her.'

He was glad, since Euphemina caused fear in him. Grid smiled as he felt a sense of empathy with Scott. Then Scott started talking.

"We plan to lead the army in four days. Will the Overgeared members be able to support us for that time?"

The goal was naturally the capital of the Belto Kingdom. Scott's request was reasonable. They would help the Ares Army conquer the Belto Kingdom. This was the condition proposed when the Overgeared Guild offered an alliance. Grid easily nodded.

"The current members will remain to support the war."

"You will...?"

Scott was startled. It was a great honor that the king of another kingdom would act for them for the next few days.

'He has some conscience.'

Ares was forced to ally with the Overgeared Guild. They were the reason why the Ares Army was branded as traitors by the royal family. Scott had no choice but to dislike Grid and the Overgeared Guild. But he felt confused because Grid became more charming the more Scott discovered.



"What?!! The armored elite troops were wiped out?"

The Belto royal family experienced great disorder. They believed the armored elite troops would come back with news that the Ares Army was wiped out.

"Duke Ares defeated them, despite losing so many troops in the war with the empire...?"

"It's clear that Ares held back his power in the war against the empire! He had planned to deceive the royal family for a long time!"

"Ares is a person who trained the armored elite troops. It isn't unusual for him to have more hidden."

The agitated princes trembled. They were afraid. It was doubtful if the Belto royal family could defend against Ares' counterattack after being weakened by the loss of the armored elite troops.

"The end... This is the end..."

"That snake has taken everything...!"

The princes were frustrated. The incompetent king remained silent. At that moment.

“Should I watch? Yes~?”

The door of the meeting room, where only the royal family could enter, was opened without permission and a man entered. It was an impressive looking man with a slim body and pale white skin.

“W-Who are you?”

The golden eyes froze the heart just by looking at them. The madness that dwelled in the man was very violent. The king and princes instinctively felt great fear and sought help.

‘Heeok?’

The king and princes gazed at the knights waiting in the corridor simultaneously gasped. It was because all the knights guarding the meeting room were killed.

"W-Who are you?"

He was violent enough to invade the royal family? He seemed like a heretic. But surprisingly, the man presented the flag of the empire.

“I am an envoy sent by the Saharan Empire. Umm, yes. It’s rotten. Kuk! Kukukuk!”

The man laughed like it was funny. He licked the sword stained with blood and grabbed the Belto king’s jaw with his hand.

“Lick my feet. Beg me to save you. Then I will defeat Ares.”

"H-Hik!"

The Belto king paled as he saw two death knights standing quietly to the left and right of Agnus. This was a nightmare. He wanted to be independent from the empire, but he was desperate from losing the armored elite troops. Now he had to grab onto the empire.

“Kik! Kikikikik!”

*Shake shake!*

Agnus looked down at the Belto king licking his shoes with shame, insult, and fear, and broke out in insane laughter. Protect the Belto Kingdom, gain the hearts of the Belto royal family, and secure the rear of the empire by disposing of the dangerous element called Ares.

Agnus had long forgotten the commands of the empire. He was just enjoying this moment of pleasure.

Grid and Agnus. The first meeting between small-minded and evil was approaching.

# Chapter 656

"Did you draw it correctly? A very nice and handsome man. Isn't it almost at the level of rugged man? Kelkelkel!"

God of War Ares. He was the bigshot closest to gaining the title of First King. Grid now knew. If it wasn't for Lael, the throne of first king would've been occupied by Ares.

"It's the first time I've heard someone calling themselves handsome. Aren't your words too much?"

Ares had the ability to make people feel comfortable. His cheerful personality and ordinary appearance gave comfort and liking to the other person.

"Have you never heard that you are handsome? That's strange... Aha, this friend."

Ares smiled and poked Grid's side with his elbow.

"Are you acting modestly in front of your lover?"

'Lover?'

Where was his lover? Grid followed Ares' gaze. It was Jishuka. The impressive beauty with tanned skin and elongated limbs like a model. She stood out even in a crowd of hundreds.

"...She isn't my lover."

"I know the rumor that you conquered both Jishuka and Yura."

"I didn't conquer them..."

"Obtaining the world's finest South American flower and Oriental flower... I'm envious, envious. I would've had a chance if I was only 10 years younger. Well."

"No, they aren't my lovers. Think about it realistically. Unless I was an enviable person who saved the universe in my past life... No, wouldn't I be trash for having two people

as lovers at the same time?"

"Ohu, then you are only dating Yura? The relationship with Jishuka was just a flash of fire?"

"Sigh, stop talking."

Grid got the scent of Doran from Ares. He thought it was pointless to bother arguing with the other person. Grid grumbled and turned his head. Ares' eyes were calm as he looked at Grid.

'He's the pure and honest type.'

It was hard to believe he was the owner of a kingdom. There was no embarrassment and his expression of emotions was honest. The 49 year old Ares knew that people like Grid normally didn't stab him in the back.

'Of course, I can't come to a conclusion too quickly.'

The fact that the first impression was good couldn't be denied. The Overgeared Guild might've used a dirty trick to forge an alliance with the Ares Army, but that had already passed. They were able to easily handle the armored elite troops thanks to the Overgeared members. Ares thought it was right to establish a good relationship with Grid and the Overgeared Guild from now on.

"I was just joking. You're narrow-minded for a hero. Shouldn't a man have a wider heart? Just like me! Kelkelkel!"

Ares started to make fun of the silent Grid. This old man... No, it was hard to believe he was the leader of the famous Ares Army.

'We have to be vigilant.'

'Is he acting?'

Jishuka and Euphemina started to warily watch Ares.

"Hah..."

Scott gave a deep sigh. It was like Lael when he was with Grid. Jishuka and

Euphemina scratched their cheeks. They roughly understood what type of person Ares was.



Ares really liked Grid's nature. In addition, he determined that the strength of the Overgeared Guild and the Overgeared Kingdom was necessary in the long term. This alliance might be forced, but he hoped it would last a long time.

Thus, he met Grid with sincerity.

"It is still insufficient?"

Ares Castle, the central training ground. Ares unveiled the 10,000 new troops he trained.

"My Fostering Strong Soldiers skill is only level 2, so I can only give 20 types of attributes. The starting level of the soldiers is only 200. Well, it's much better when compared to the starting point of the armored elite troops. Hahaha!"

"..."

Grid's group and the Ares Army guild had gone to see the soldiers. Ares' behavior of revealing his skills and new army to others was absurd.

"D-Did you lose your mind?"

Scott screamed out too late. He couldn't understand why Ares was revealing his hand to Grid and the Overgeared members. Ares shrugged.

"They've already grasped some of my abilities. Why bother concealing what will be revealed over time? It's better to know early and be smart. Kelkelkel!"

"Hah... Sigh..."

Scott breathed roughly and let out a deep sigh. His usual cool appearance was gone. His face was so haggard he seemed like he would collapse. Grid asked a question in this awkward atmosphere.

"Distinct attributes? Is this the skills they can learn?"

“Let’s see... Things like advanced Riding Techniques, advanced Heavy Armor Mastery, intermediate Weapons Mastery and beginner anti-magic shields. Oh, there is also the beginner Charge. There are quite a few? A lot of skill slots are filled because I put in two advanced skills.”

“...This isn’t a joke?”

In Satisfy, there were two ways for a player to train an army.

The first was to build a barrack in a territory where they were a lord. Then capital and people would be invested to train soldiers. Depending on the level of the barracks, the level and skills of the soldiers produced varied. It was like a famous game one century ago, XtarXraft. It was convenient to use resources to produce soldiers but they had the disadvantage of a low level and low skills level.

Secondly, a player could directly train or instruct his NPCs to recruit and train soldiers. It took a lot more work because they needed to take care of everything. It was time consuming and money consuming. But the soldiers could choose the skills they wanted to learn and the level of the soldiers steadily rose during the training course.

In conclusion, Grid raised soldiers using both the first and second method. The soldiers produced using the first method were placed in the lower units such as security forces. Meanwhile, the soldiers produced with the second method were trained as elite troops. In particular, the soldiers trained by Asmophel and Piaro were guaranteed to acquire high levels and various skills.

But separate characteristics were difficult to artificially give. There were many cases of it occurring naturally during training. For example, Piaro’s soldiers were given the attribute of ‘120% increase in adaptation rate to rice fields terrain.’ In any case, this was the conclusion.

‘Even the soldiers directly trained by Piaro and Asmophel can’t acquire dozens of different types of attributes, and advanced skills are impossible.’

The skills were learned from the beginner level and steadily grew. That was a soldier. Yet Ares’ soldiers had advanced skills from the beginning.

Ares’ ability was great.

“A scam... You’re truly great. But wouldn’t big skills have constraints?”



"I will keep it a secret since it's too disadvantageous for me. Haha!"

"...No, you should tell me. I thought you were broad-minded."

"I am broad-minded and thorough."

"..."

In no time, Grid was at ease talking with Ares. It was like they were old friends. Jishuka, Euphemina, Pon, and Regas showed great interest in Ares' words. On the other hand, the Ares troops were confused.

'What's he thinking?'

The Overgeared Guild were people they could rely on. But it was impossible to rely on them forever. One day, there would be a confrontation. Yes, they were potential enemies. Why was he giving out information so freely?

'Grid is also Kraugel's friend!'

It was likely that Ares' information would get exposed to Kraugel and this was disadvantageous in many ways. Ares asked Grid after examining the faces of the concerned members.

"How about it? Won't it be overwhelming if your items are added to my army?"

"Hoh..."

What if the strongest army trained by Ares was using the strongest armor that Grid produced?

"The empire? We will chew them up. Of course, it isn't possible right now. Haha!"

He wanted to obtain the legendary blacksmith Grid. Ares sincerely hoped. He believed that the strongest army no one could go against would be born the moment his power was combined with Grid's power.

"Let's be friends."

Ares laughed and held out his hand. At this moment, he was radiating a dignity

comparable to Grid. No, maybe it was even more than him. The common neighborhood uncle disappeared like it was a lie and a big bear-like threatening body approached.

‘As a specialist in training and commanding soldiers, it’s natural to have a high dignity stat.’

Grid wondered what his class was. Grid put aside this question and shook Ares’ hand.

"Okay, let’s get along well.’



The Belto royal palace.

"The little scum, they’re too slow.”

The person sitting on the throne wasn’t the king. It was Agnus, a man with pale skin and green hair.

*Spin spin.*

A gem-encrusted circular object was being spun in his hands. The crown that symbolized the Belto Kingdom was turned into a mere plaything. The Belto king watched this without any anger and carefully asked Agnus.

"I summoned all the troops that were deployed in each fortress. It’s now possible for the enemy to advance to this place without any interruptions... Isn’t this dangerous?”

The fortresses were defense facilities built in important military places. The value of the fortresses in a war was great. It was the most suitable facility to repel the enemy. Yet Agnus closed all the fortresses. The enemy could march without a hitch. The Belto king and his men couldn’t understand Agnus’ intentions.

Agnus replied to them.

"You want to know why I gathered all of the kingdom’s military power here?”

"Y-Yes.”

The emblem of a pink rose on Agnus’ chest kept capturing the eyes of the officials. The

rose symbolized the empire's second greatest power, the Red Knights, who were under the command of Empress Marie. The Belto king and officials was certain that Agnus was a close aide. It was honestly surprising that he came to help them. It seemed right for them to survive under a power they despised rather than being killed by a traitor.

Unfortunately, Agnus wasn't a person they could depend on.

"I want them to come here as quickly as possible."

"...?"

"Isn't it boring waiting? So I opened the way. Come quickly. Kukuk~ the more bodies there are, the more convenient it is."

"A-Ahh..."

This was the reason they sacrificed so many battlefields on the way to the capital? The Belto Kingdom's officials shook. Their faces were red from repressing their anger as Agnus told them.

"As soon as the enemy arrives, don't resist and open the gates. Throw the people and soldiers to the enemy. Okay? Kik! Kilkik! Puhahahat!"

"T-This is ridiculous...!"

In the end, some nobles couldn't bear it and rose from their seats.

"You're insane! I can't believe that you're acting according to Empress Marie's will!"

"That's right! Don't resist the enemy and open the gates? Throw the people and soldiers to the enemy? What is this nonsense...! Heeok?"

The nobles fell silent. It was because Agnus summoned a lich.

*Clack. Claack. Clack clack clack clack.*

The lich was wrapped in a cloak and emitted terrifying magic power. They didn't know why, but they immediately felt like running away from here.

“Kill them.”

Agnus commanded.

*Kuaaaaang!*

The lich fired magic at the nobles.

[You have killed the nobles of the Belto Kingdom.]

[Baal’s Contractor is one who brings out the fundamental fear in humans.]

[The Belto royal family and remaining nobles don’t have any animosity against you as they have become more frightened.]

[Some people have overcome their fear. They mean to resist against you.]

“Kik? Kill more.”

*Kwarururung!*

The name of the lich who continued to kill following the will of his master was Mumud. Mumud had no face as a skeleton, but he seemed to be shedding tears.

# Chapter 657

"Isn't it strange?"

The Ares Army had to occupy a total of 13 fortresses before arriving at the capital. It was a big war. The occupation difficulty of the fortresses were so high that the Ares members and Grid's group were quite nervous. It should be a tough fight. But for some reason, all the fortresses were empty. All the fortresses on the way to the capital were empty, without even one rodent.

"What's the reason for clearing the fortresses?"

"Have they already given up on the war?"

The fortresses were strategic points. There was no better base than a fortress to stop the enemy. Yet the fortresses were vacated? It was difficult for Grid to understand. He could only interpret it as the Belto Kingdom giving up on this war.

On the other hand, the Ares Army had a different hypothesis.

"The royal family thinks that Ares' new army destroyed the elite armored troops."

Yes, the Belto royal family didn't know about the involvement of the Overgeared Guild. On the other hand, they knew about Ares' Fostering Strong Soldiers skill. From the standpoint of the Belto royal family, it was natural to attribute the deaths of the armored elite troops to Ares' new army.

"The royal family has clearly seen it. The armored elite troops raised their level and strength in real time in the war against the empire."

"Fortresses are efficient enough to defend with a small number of people, but they will eventually succumb to overwhelming power."

"It's clear that the Belto royal family is afraid that our new elite army will defeat the troops deployed to each fortress and become stronger."

"Thus, the king gathered all the troops in the capital and planned to intercept us at

once.”

“Um.”

Ares nodded as he listened to the opinions of his people. It meant there was no disagreement.

"They acted wisely in their own way."

The level of Ares' new army, the 'Iron Wheels,' was still only 200. It was higher than the average soldier level of the Belto Kingdom, but their number was only 10,000. Ares wanted the level of the Iron Wheels to be higher and planned to use the conquest of the 13 fortresses as a means to level them up. But that plan was gone. The 10,000 level 200 Iron Wheels would have to go to the capital and deal with an army of 130,000 at once.

'Hrmmm... I'm a little annoyed because the plan has become a little twisted.'

But it wasn't serious enough to be frustrating. Ares had 30,000 troops in addition to the Iron Wheel soldiers. He was confident that he could lead them well to victory. It was natural, but the Iron Wheels also possessed the characteristic of 'recovering all resources when levelling up' like the armored elite troops, so the Iron Wheels could fight infinitely on the battlefield. It was okay as long as they weren't hit by someone with an unusual attack power like Grid, Jishuka, or Euphemina.

'And there are no such monsters in the Belto Kingdom.'

Those three monsters were currently on Ares' side. It was reassuring. He thought that no matter how he fought, he couldn't lose this war. But Ares wasn't distracted. In a war, he could rule perfectly. The mild-mannered uncle transformed into a god of war.

"Shall we go and trample on the animal that opened its mouth without knowing that its guts are pulled out?"

"Ohhhhhh!"

The Ares Army didn't need to be wary of the fortresses and sped up their march. They headed to the capital without a hitch.

"Breaking news! Urgent breaking news!"

The media all over the world, including South Korea and the US, were turned upside down.

Immortal. They introduced themselves as Agnus' followers and sent a message.

*-Today, Agnus will slaughter the Overgeared King and the God of War. Agnus will reign as king of the living and the dead.*

Agnus. A person known to have one of the first epic classes who was shrouded in mystery. He never made any public appearances. This was the first time. However, it was publicly known that Agnus was strong. It was due to all the rankers who claimed to have been killed by him.

'Crazy!'

He was someone who slaughtered a player just because they were standing on the street. It was natural for the attention of the world to be concentrated on him after he used the media to show his presence. In addition...

'The target of his massacre is the Overgeared king Grid!'

Most people didn't know about the 'god of war.' But even a five year old child knew who the Overgeared King was. Overgeared King Grid was one of the most famous and influential people in the world!

"He declared that he would kill such a big person!"

"Agnus! He truly is as mad as the rumors say!"

"Send people to the Belto Kingdom right away! Be prepared to write this scoop and don't miss anything!"

『At 10:24 a.m. in Korean time, an email arrived at media companies all over the world. Today, Agnus will slaughter the Overgeared King and the God of War. Agnus will reign as king of the living and the dead. As you all know, Agnus is the first epic hidden class and is currently 5th on the unified rankings... 』

『We must focus on the expression of ‘king of the living and the dead.’ In the past, some people speculated that Agnus’ class is a lich. In other words, he’s likely to be immortal...』

『Veradin, who identified himself as Agnus’ follower, was named a genius of the 10 Rookies and is now 1st in the necromancer rankings. The fact that he is following Agnus shows how great Agnus is... 』

『Immortal. There’s a high probability that it will be an undead army with Lich Agnus and Necromancer Veradin. They are probably the strongest group of players after the Overgeared Guild. He wants to use Overgeared King Grid as a target to prove his strength.』

『But does he stand a chance against Grid? I don’t think so. Agnus was only the 7th ranked player before Kraugel and Yura disappeared from the rankings, despite being the first epic hidden class. Of course, the 7th ranking isn’t low. But I don’t think he has the talent to reach the top-class players classified as geniuses.』

『I agree. The class called lich is supposed to exercise overwhelming power based on infinite power and survival, but Agnus’ nature itself will have limitations. He would be much lower than Kraugel if they share the same class. It’s arrogant to declare to the whole world that he could slaughter Grid, who only Kraugel has beaten.』

Most of the media focused on the confrontation between Grid and Agnus. There was little mention of the mysterious God of War.

But those who had knowledge were very interested in the God of War. One of them was OGC’s director, Lee Gookrae.

‘The God of War... He can’t be a small fry if he’s called a god.’

Director Lee Gookrae was curious about the identity of the God of War. While the other



broadcasters were focused on Agnus and Grid, OGC had the sense that they should obtain information about the God of War and tell viewers about it.



“Unbelievable!”

The capital of the Overgeared Kingdom, Reinhardt. Lauel heard the news late due to being connected to the game and felt a chill go down his spine. Agnus? That crazy monster stood on the side of the Belto Kingdom to stop Ares?

‘No!’

They were caught up in the fight between Agnus and Ares. Grid would be tired and at a disadvantage if he collided with Agnus without any preparations.

‘How did this work become twisted so suddenly? No... I was played from the beginning.’

Veradin of the Immortal Guild.

Lauel belatedly realized.

“Veradin...! This is all your work! You predicted we would hold hands with the Ares Army!”

Veradin was a figure that Lauel was on guard against since his days as part of the 10 Rookies. Lauel thought of himself as the best genius in the world, but he had to admire Veradin’s brains and cold-hearted thinking.

‘The worst evil from my past life...!’

Lauel was convinced. Veradin expected the Overgeared Guild and Ares to hold hands and made a plan to destroy both at the same time.

‘It’s difficult to predict what traps will be set in the Belto Kingdom.’

Lauel sent Grid a whisper.

*-Grid, come back right now...!*

It was before he could even finish speaking.

*-Why? Is it because of Agnus?*

*-...!!*



Let's go back to a long time ago, before Immortal's message was spread to the media around the world.

"What's this situation?"

The Ares Army and Grid's group arrived at Belto's capital. They were thinking about how to break through the formation of 130,000 troops, only to become surprised. It was because the gates to the capital were open, as if they were welcoming Ares. Even the walls were empty.

"A trap?"

"If this is a trap, it's the most insignificant and stupid trap in the world."

The enemy opening the gates wasn't a trap, but a surrender. Ares was a prudent but bold person. In this case, he didn't feel the need to think deeply.

"Everyone enter. I need to see if the enemy is foolish enough to intercept us in the city or if they have run away."

*Kung! Kung! Kung!*

The Ares Army moved from where they were stopped in front of the gates. They entered the capital with Ares in the lead. There were 130,000 troops scattered through the streets of the city, not even in proper formations.

"H-Hik...!"

"The enemy! The rebel Ares has come to the capital!"

"D-Don't fight!"

“...?”

The state of the Belto Kingdom was weird. There was no leader among them. The soldiers just rushed towards the Ares Army. Ares felt a big surprise at the abnormal situation.

‘What’s happening in this kingdom?’

The command system had completely collapsed. He didn’t know the situation, but something must’ve happened with the capital.

‘In any case, this is good luck for me!’

Ares and his troops concentrated in dealing with the enemies and the level 200 Iron Wheels started to increase their level dramatically.

“Hrmm.”

The Ares Army cut down the enemy for several hours and reached the front of the palace. Scott looked at the tranquil palace that didn’t look like it was in the midst of a war.

“Strange. I have a bad feeling.”

"Yes, it looks suspicious. But how can we stop here?"

Now they just needed to take the king. Then they would conquer the Belto Kingdom. In addition, the enemy’s army had already collapsed. Ares had no reason to hesitate.

*Clink!*

The moment Ares opened the entrance to the palace.

*Piing.*

There was a purple aura. The power of a death knight emerged from the darkness.

“Hup!”

Ares was currently leading an army of 40,000. All their stats had risen significantly.

The death knight's surprise attack was remarkable but Ares promptly evaded it. The purple light only hit air. However, magic immediately flew to the place where Ares had evaded.

*Kuaaaaang!*

"Ares!"

The Ares troops cried out when they saw Ares being swallowed up by flames.

"Kik! Kikikik! Kuhahahahahat!"

Laughter was heard from a dark place where light was completely blocked.

'What?'

Grid didn't know who the owner of this bizarre laughter was. He had never met the owner of this light. On the other hand, the faces of the Ares members, Jishuka, Euphemina, Pon, and Regas turned white.

"Agnus!"

At the same time.

*Kwaaaaah!*

*Clack! Clack clack!!*

From the inside of the palace, a large number of skeletons pushed out like a tide. In addition, the bodies of the Belto Kingdom's army rose like zombies and struck Grid's party and the Ares Army.

*Chaaeng! Chaeng!*

*Kwaaaang!*

"Agnus!"

The sound of yelling and screaming, as well as simultaneous explosions filled the ears. Pandemonium! Grid's party and the Ares troops were in great confusion due to the

unexpected event. Of course, this wasn't everyone. In particular, Grid was fine. Grid had just blown away some skeletons when his gaze fell on someone.

"You're Agnus?"

"Then you are the Overgeared King~? Yes~? Kilkil."

Grid locked eyes with Agnus' gold ones. Then...

*Kuaaaaang!*

A death knight broke through the formation of the Iron Wheels and swung the sword at Grid. It was different from the death knight that first attacked Ares.

*Jjejeong!*

Grid blocked the death knight's sword.

*Kuaaaaang!*

Then a lich's magic struck him.

[You have suffered 11,900 damage.]

At the same time.

*-Grid, come back right now...!*

A whisper came from Lael. It was a whisper that stimulated Grid's pride as he was surrounded by hundreds of cameras.

*-Why? Is it because of Agnus?*

*-...!!*

*-Do you think I'll run away? Is that what you were planning to say?*

*Suuk.*

Grid's equipped the Slaughterer's Mask on his face.

*Kwajik!*

*Kwajijjik!*

The four golden hands around him turned into Lifael's Spear.

"I didn't know today was a mad dog day."

"Kik?"

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

A brilliant light. A white flash swallowed the middle of the battlefield.

# Chapter 658

“ ”  
...

It was a phenomenon. Students in class, office workers, passengers, and even passersby on the street were all gazing at the smartphone in their hand. On the screen that they were watching, the scene of a battlefield was unfolding. The background was a very large city with thousands or tens of thousands of houses.

The soldiers of the Ares Army used weapons, shields, and sometimes movement tools to demonstrate an agile and destructive advance that broke into enemy territory. The resistance of the Belto Kingdom was like fallen leaves. This was an army made by a player? The strength of the soldiers was great and the Ares Army commanders, who used the layout of the buildings and the enemies in real time, were like historical people. The viewers witnessed the progress of the quest and were reminded of the strength of the imperial army.

On the other hand, the Belto Kingdom didn't have a proper commander and it seemed like the capital would be taken. The viewers felt thrilled by the power of Ares' army. In particular, they were impressed with Ares in the vanguard. They were forced to understand why Agnus called Ares the God of War. Then...

*Claack!*

*Clack clack!*

The flow changed the moment the Ares Army reached the palace. The emergence of the huge death knight was like a 180 degree change. The death knight and lich broke through Ares' front lines and waves of skeletons swallowed up the Ares Army.

Slaughter, destruction, and screams occurred. The cameras of the broadcasting stations captured every soldier constantly fighting against the skeletons. And along the way.

[[Finally!]]

The cameras on the battlefield focused on two men. These two men were none other

than Grid and Agnus. Both men showed a unique presence as they encountered each other in the middle of the bloody battlefield. Agnus had an armored death knight and the magic of the lich with him.

Grid wielded a blue greatsword from the centre of four golden hands that moved by themselves. Agnus broke through the barrier of the soldiers with the skeletons and faced Grid.

The broadcasters were excited.

『Agnus and the Overgeared King are finally clashing!』

『Can Agnus slaughter the Overgeared King as he declared?』

『Hrmm... Isn't a close combat fight too favorable for Grid? I don't understand why Agnus is narrowing the distance to Grid. If the death knight is in the lead and he stays at the back with the lich, won't he be able to fight against Grid more equally?』

『It's just arrogance. Agnus had two monsters with the death knight and lich. He's sure he can win, even if the conditions are favorable towards Grid. In other words, he's mocking Grid right now.』

Now the commentators would learn about Agnus' real power. Agnus' class? It wasn't a lich. If he was a lich, then he wouldn't have another lich serving him.

『Agnus can be proud. His class exerts more power than anyone expected and that power is certainly more than Grid. The balance of the game was already destroyed the moment he called more than one lich and death knight.』

『Certainly... From a power perspective, Agnus seems to be superior to Grid. Agnus seems to have secured a hidden growth type class, not a simple epic class. But we must not forget Grid's power. He defeated the sky above the sky, so it's hard to imagine him being defeated.』

『That's right. Grid is someone we can't measure. I'm sure that Grid will win. Why? It's because Agnus is too powerful. He must have some big penalties for his abilities.』

『The more brilliant the presence, the more rules there are... 』

The death knights. They were the strongest undead among the third generation



necromancers. It depended on the 'life' of the knight but a death knights' stats were basically a few times better than a player's. In addition, they had a lot of powerful skills. The most frightening thing was that they could grow through levelling up like a player. Despite many limitations, such as being restricted in the items that could be worn and being difficult to control, a death knight was nevertheless the strongest force of a necromancer.

Yet Agnus had two death knights. Was that all? He also had two liches.

Lich. They were the top undead who could use magic with infinite magic power. Their strength overwhelmed a death knight. The evidence was that liches who appeared as bosses often had death knights as their subordinates. In other words, a lich wasn't an existence that players could handle. Many people guessed that a lich would appear as the fourth advancement class of a necromancer.

Yes, a lich was a powerful existence, so people assumed that Agnus' epic class was supposedly a lich. The Satisfy setting meant it was impossible for players to deal with a lich's infinite magic power. Yet Agnus had two liches. He was already beyond the category of a player.

Thus, people were skeptical. They were certain that Agnus would have a big penalty that would grab at his feet. They thought that Grid would win in this war.



[Lifael's Spear]

Rating: Legendary (Reproduced Transformation)

Durability: Infinite

Attack Power: 1,230~1,890

\* Fixed damage of +3,000 on each attack.

\* There is a high probability of activating the 'Light Wheel' skill. Every time Light Wheel is activated, Magic Missile (Enhanced) is shot. The number of Magic Missiles is determined according to the usage range of Light Wheel. The damage of Magic Missile is fixed at 4,000 per hit and will increase by 20% if the target is evil. No mana will be

consumed.

\* When defending or evading, there is a high probability that Shield of Light will activate. Magic Missile (Enhanced) is attached to the Shield of Light. Any target that pierces through the Shield of Light will be hit by Magic Missile. The damage of Magic Missile is fixed at 4,000 per hit and will increase by 20% if the target is evil. The accuracy of the Magic Missile counterattack is 100% and does not consume mana.

\* When moving, there is a high probability of activating the 'Light of Guidance' skill.

\* Attack power +20% against those with dark magic power.

The reason that Grid changed Lifael's Spear was purely for Isabel. He was hoping for her health and happiness. But as a result, Grid gained something excellent for himself. He had perfect comprehension of the myth rated Lifael's Spear. Grid was now able to reproduce the power of the new Lifael's Spear, which added specific abilities while weakening the power of White Transformation. It was also four of them!

*Pajik!*

*Pajijijik!*

Agnus' small pupils flinched as the four God Hands around Grid stopped blocking the skeletons and started to change in real time. It was because he sensed the divine power coming from the golden hands that were gradually turning into spears.

'Kukuk! This is the basics!'

There were many undead type monsters in Satisfy. It wasn't strange for Overgeared King Grid to create weapons dedicated to the undead. The excited Agnus heard Grid's taunt.

"A crazy dog? I didn't know today was a mad dog day."

"Kik?"

*Kuwaaaaaah!*

The four spears spun in the air like a wheel and covered Agnus at the same time. Magic Missile (Enhanced) with its divine power was released at the same time, devastating the battlefield around them.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

“.....!!!”

The eyes of the Ares troops widened from where they were fighting with the skeletons that Immortal's necromancers continued to produce. The explosion that occurred at the spot where Agnus was standing instantly killed dozens of skeletons in the area. It was huge damage. The goosebumps were comparable to those caused by Grid's red phoenixes.

‘What’s the identity of those golden hands?’

‘They can change shape depending on the enemy and exert an overwhelming firepower every time... ’

The name of Overgeared King couldn't be disputed. Grid's items were the strongest.

‘Even Agnus is helpless in front of the best... Heok?’

A magical explosion filled with divine power. It was natural for the Ares troops to think Agnus received a serious blow. But Agnus walked out from the dust without a scratch on him. It was thanks to the Body Shield skill. Baal's Contractor was top class among the necromancer types and had the ability to utilize their excellent body. The Body Shield skill boasted enormous efficiency. Any attack that dealt less than 10,000 damage was completely blocked. It was like Grid's Can you Become the King of the Dead? skill that could summon the Overgeared Skeletons to block an attack once.

“You lousy bastard!”

Agnus had a surprisingly cautious personality for someone so crazy. It was why he chose a battlefield filled with dead bodies as the stage of his first public battle. Grid cursed and quickly narrowed the distance to Agnus. Agnus' death knight blocked his way.

*Jjeejeeong!*

“...!!”

The four Lifael's Spears penetrated a hole in the death knight and opened the way for Grid.

“Kuahahahat! Come!”

Agnus was full of relaxation. He believed in the lich that was guarding his side. He thought Grid would be destroyed before he could approach. But.

[You have dealt 5,700 damage to the target.]

[The target has resisted the damage.]

[The target has resisted the damage.]

[You have dealt 6,100 damage to the target.]

‘Full resistance?’

Grid was wearing the Holy Light set. He had been focused on Agnus' lich when selecting his equipment. Thanks to this, the magic of the lich barely damaged Grid.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship!”

Grid succeeded in narrowing the distance to Agnus using items.

*Taack!*

He took a big step and moved the +9 Failure in succession.

“Linked Kill!”

“Body Shield!”

Agnus shouldn't be able to cope.

*Puok!*

[The target's attack power is too strong. The defense has failed.]

"Kik? Cough!"

Agnus' chest was pierced after his shield broke. Agnus spat out blood from his mouth as As Grid was linking up the second strike of Linked Kill.

*Peeeeeeong!*

A body moved between Grid and Agnus and exploded, breaking off Grid's attack motion. It was a corpse explosion.

'Shit!'

Linked Kill was cancelled! Grid stumbled and Agnus stabbed him with a longsword.

*Peeeeeeong!*

[You have suffered 2,859 damage.]

"...?!"

Wasn't Baal's Contractor a necromancer? How could he wield a sword and what was this damage? The physical damage of the Holy Light set was low, but this damage couldn't be understood. Agnus saw Grid's shaky eyes and clicked his tongue.

"This is a normal attack."

Grid's thick eyebrows rose even higher.

“That’s Jishuka’s saying...!”

Grid’s cry containing his anger didn’t last long.

*Peeeeeeong!*

Agnus’ death knight suddenly sprang from where it had been isolated by the four spears. It also attacked Grid. The attack didn’t contain great destructive power, but Grid was shaken because it had the effect of ‘pushing all objects in range.’

"Shall I show you something interesting?"

Agnus laughed and opened the Rune of Death. He had obtained the rune much earlier than Grid’s Rune of Darkness. Currently, there were nine skills attached to the rune.

“Furfu’s Power.”

“.....!!”

Grid was reminded of something the moment he heard the name of a great demon. Their starting lines were different. During the time when Agnus signed a contract with Baal, Grid was just a common novice user, like a stone on the roadside.

# Chapter 659

Furfu. Along with Hell Gao, Drasion, Morax, and Astaroth, they were the great demons that the public were most familiar with. It was because these great demons appeared as regular guests in stories of Muller's heroism that could be found in various quests and books.

That's right. Furfu was one of the great demons who had their bodies sealed by Muller. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that all two billion users knew the name.

"Furfu's Power."

"Furfu...?"

Why did Agnus mention the name of a great demon? Ordinary viewers didn't know the concept of 'runes' and were puzzled, while the Overgeared members and Ares troops turned pale. At that moment.

*Swaaaaah!*

The night sky turned white. It was a change in landscape caused by the frost that started to pour down like rain.

'Blizzard-like magic?'

Grid and the Overgeared members took up defense postures.

"It isn't magic!"

Ares shouted from where he was dealing with a death knight and lich with the help of Luck and Scott. His voice sounded urgent.

"It's the power of Furfu...!"

Yes, this was the power that Ares wanted most. The might power was taken by Agnus!

"Dammit...! Beware of Agnus' familiars...!"

*Kuaaaaaang!*

Ares' cry was buried. It was due to the aura explosion from the death knight that was bound by Luck. The death knight's aura that poured towards the sky was no longer purple. It was transparent like ice.

"Keok!"

Ares was hit in the chest and coughed up blood. For a commander who needed to lead the army until the end of the war, safety was the most important virtue. Most of Ares' stats were invested in stamina and health. Yet he received a serious injury from the death knight's blow.

"Ares...! This damn bastard!"

It didn't change its aggro and only attacked Ares until the end. Luck rotated like a spinning top in front of the persistent death knight and used the acceleration to aim a mighty kick at the death knight's face.

*Peeok!*

A heavy blow! The skull that seemed small compared to the gigantic body looked like it shattered. Luck's strike was that powerful. But the death knight was fine. The frost from the sky created a barrier at the point where the death knight was hit, nullifying Luck's kick.

"What?"

This was a complete scam! Unlike Luck, who was losing his cool, Scott calmly grasped the situation.

"The caster...! Attack Agnus!"

".....!"

Scott's shout reached Grid.

If only he had secured the rune before raiding Hell Gao. His rune would also hold the power of Hell Gao. Grid was filled with envy and regret when he saw Agnus use Furfu's power.



“Yes.”

He hurriedly recovered. All of the Magic Missiles fired by Lifael’s Spear were blocked by Agnus’ Body Shield and Agnus was fighting back to back with the death knight and lich.

“The starting point is different...!”

It was actually an excuse. Grid and Agnus’ starting points were the same. No, maybe Grid was earlier. Why? Grid had been playing Satisfy since the closed beta. Why was Grid a low level user while Agnus was Baal’s Contractor? It was simple due to a lack of talent and skill, not because their starting point was different. In other words.

‘Our difference occurred at that time...!’

Grid recalled the past while opening the power attached to the Rune of Darkness. Was he lacking after becoming Pagma's Descendant? No. The evidence was that he had already caught up with Kraugel, the sky above the sky.

“...I will fill up any gaps that remain!”

*Hwaruruk!*

Grid’s body was surrounded by flames. It was from head to toe. The red flickering covered Grid’s eyebrows and hair. Belial’s Power, the power of fire was opened.

“...!!”

Agnus, who could continue to release Furfu’s Power thanks to the help of Baal, felt his eyes widening. It was because the intensity of the flames coming from Grid was so sharp it felt like his flesh was distorting.

‘That’s right!’

This was the true power of a great demon that was incomparable to Furfu, who was weakened and had his body sealed by Muller!

*Duguen!*

A wide smile spread on Agnus’ face. He was enjoying this moment. Grid won that

power and took one step ahead of him. Agnus was delighted at being able to grasp the power he would eventually have.

“Kik! Kilkil! Kuhahahat! Come!”

Agnus shouted with a high momentum, but didn’t engage directly with Grid. One hand extended to the sky as he attempted to release Furfu’s strength to block Grid.

*Clack!*

*Clack clack!!*

A defense line of 50 skeleton warriors armed with a sword and shield was formed. The effect of a unique skill of Baal’s Contractor that could enhance the stats of a summons and Furfu’s Power meant that each skeleton warrior was equivalent to a level 250 user.

A one man army! There was no statement more appropriate to describe Agnus. But no matter how powerful the army, Grid already proved that this force was helpless in front of him.

“Flames of Hell Path!”

*Hwaruruk!*

The flaming Grid rushed towards Grid.

*Chwaruruk!*

*Clack! Clack clack!!*

The skeleton warriors that approached Grid and the frost in the sky were melted.

“Hah!”

Agnus’ smile of admiration became thicker. It was amazing that Grid dealt damage despite Furfu’s power protecting the summoner from enemy attacks twice.

‘Did he already know about Furfu’s Power?’

Indeed, this was the guy who defeated the rodent Kraugel.

*Clink!*

Agnus admired Grid's skill and gave a command to the 20 skeleton archers behind him. It was the appearance of the skeleton archers that Agnus used to deal damage in hunting and combat. Their attack power was high, although their physical strength and defense were significantly lower than the skeleton warriors.

*Ping!*

*Pipipipiping!*

The sharp bone arrows flew towards Grid, who was narrowing the distance with Agnus. But Grid's momentum didn't decrease.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship, Transcend."

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

As soon as he saw the flying arrows, Grid changed to ranged attacks.

*Pepeng!*

*Pepepepeong!*

Grid's energy blades intercepted the flying arrows. The unbalanced skeleton archers collapsed from the aftermath of the explosion and Agnus recalled them. At this point, Grid was already in front of Agnus.

"Kill!"

"I won't allow it!"

*Kwajak!*

The death knight moved. It was the death knight that had been tied up by the God Hands wielding Mjolnir after Item Transformation ended. It released its aura as it moved in front of Grid. The explosion between aura and Kill caused a powerful shock wave that shook the ground. At that moment.

“Corpse Explosion!”

Agnus exploded the bodies that rose from the ground shaking. No, he tried to explode them. But the bodies didn’t explode.

“Eh?”

Agnus was confused. The skill was activated and mana was consumed, but the skill effect wasn’t shown. His sharp eyes discovered a black ring on Grid’s finger.

"Dispel!"

He knew exactly what he saw. Grid was wearing Dark Bus’ Ring. In addition, he was careful not to let his sword dance be cancelled by the Corpse Explosion.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship!”

*Paaaat!*

The death knight couldn’t endure Kill and fell down. Grid narrowed the distance to Agnus as much as possible and used his ultimate skill.

““Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle.”

“Kuk...! Kuhahahahat!”

The energy of the blue greatsword, enhanced by flames, was tremendous enough to remind Agnus of the ultimate boss monsters he raided so far. Agnus felt thrilled as the fiery +9 Failure aimed for his vital spot.

*Puok!*

The strike that precisely hit Agnus’ heart announced the start of Linked Kill.

*Puooook!*

The second strike aimed at the same spot. Grid’s amazing skill meant Agnus’ health gauge fell in an instant. It was an overwhelming damage that made Baal’s Contractor’s Mana Shield useless.

“From now on...!”

The true power of Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle would be revealed when the third strike of Linked Kill hit. Grid raised his concentration. He raised it to its limit in order to hit Agnus with the next attack. There was still a smile on Agnus’ face.

“Peong-”

A sound emerged just before Grid’s third consecutive Linked Kill hit Agnus.

*Kwajajajak!*

Jishuka, Euphemina, Pon, and Regas were astonished as the lich suddenly fired magic at Grid.

“No way!”

The strongest the species, the higher the ego. Jishuka and the others were convinced that the lich’s aggro wouldn’t pour towards Grid as like as they were attacking it. This wasn’t the case. Agnus’ dominance violated common sense.

"Kuaaaack!"

“Kuhahahahaha!”

Agnus laughed as he watched Grid scream from the lightning that flew from his rear. He laughed as Grid’s sword dance was cancelled. But this didn’t last long.

‘Dead?’

*Swaaaaah!*

Grid turned to grey after being hit by the lich’s magic? Agnus was puzzled. Grid wouldn’t die from the lich’s magic. Even if he died, he had the passive of a legend and would fall into an immortal state. Then how did he die?

‘Don’t tell me...!’

Agnus urgently moved his gaze behind him.

"It's too late! Shit!"

*Puooook!*

"Keeok!"

Grid's third Linked Kill flew from the side and struck Agnus in the side. It was all thanks to Grid utilizing the 'position change' skill with Randy.

[[Ninja...!]]

The commentators around the world were excited by the reversal. In particular, there was an uproar in Japan. The Japanese commentator saw Grid's swapping skill and was reminded of a ninja. He revealed unnecessary pride that Grid acted like a ninja. At this moment, no one doubted that Grid would win. In particular, Grid was aware that Agnus' health gauge was like a lamp in front of the wind.

'It's the end!'

Grid was linking up Wave when Agnus' sullen voice was heard in his ears.

"Bentao's Mockery."

*Peok!*

[You have suffered 1,930 damage.]

[A legend doesn't die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

"...?!"

Grid's confusion reached the peak due to the situation that couldn't be understood.

# Chapter 660

"Bentao's Mockery."

".....!!"

Grid suffered through something incredible once Agnus used a mysterious skill.

*Kihihihit!*

He saw the illusion of a fat clown.

[You have heard Bentao's bad laughter. You can't stay calm after listening to it.]

[You have lost your composure. The deployment of all active skills will be cancelled.]

[Insane Clown King Bentao has fallen into a rage. Resistance has failed.]

[It will take over one minute to overcome the 'frenzy' state.]

[During the frenzy, your base damage will increase slightly, but your defense will decrease slightly. In addition, the casting speed and resource consumption of all skills are greatly increased.]

[Bentao has stretched out his hand while you are losing your cool. Your health has changed with the owner of Bentao.]

[49,300 health has become 819!]

'What?'

Their health gauges were changed? It was a type of skill that was difficult for Grid to understand. Grid was forced to feel confused. Above all, the hardest part about

Bentao's Mockery was that it 'changed' instead of 'reduced' Grid's health. Thus, the healing and shield effects of Tiramet's Belt and First King wasn't applied.

*Puok!*

[You have suffered 1,930 damage.]

[A legend doesn't die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

“...!!”

In this gap, Grid lost his cool. Agnus wielded a sharp blade at Grid's back and Grid lost the last insurance of the legendary class.

'Shit!'

He only had five seconds of invincibility remaining. The irritated and nervous Grid started swinging his sword at random. Of course, he didn't actually wield his sword without thinking. Grid had accumulated a lot of combat experience and his body remembered how to fight, despite his mind being in an impatient and uncomfortable state.

Yes, Grid was attacking Agnus with a normal pattern. He mixed his skills with basic attacks and paid attention to the increased accuracy rate. The problem was more than the frenzied state. Pagma's Swordsmanship took one or two seconds to deploy. Now Grid couldn't use it as quickly as normal and his attacks weren't threatening.

“Ha? You became a mess just from losing your cheat?”

Grid panicked when he failed to link up his skills and the motions were cancelled. The smile gradually disappeared from Agnus' face as the young man sloppily avoided his attacks. He lost interest in Grid. It was natural. A status condition that made all actions impossible, a silence that completely banned the use of skills, and a confusion that increased the difficulty of controlling the body. There wasn't one person who hadn't suffered from Agnus' abysmal abilities.



Then what about Grid? It might be because he relied on a legendary class' 'resistance to all status conditions' for years and became accustomed to it. Unlike other players, he didn't acquire skills to cope with the situation. The helplessness exposed in this moment was enough to disappoint Agnus.

"You defeated Kraugel?"

*Peeng!*

Agnus avoided Grid's attack, stretched out his hand and caused an explosion using the 'charging' features from his fingertips, hitting Grid.

"Kuk!"

In a situation where time was short, Grid became frustrated when Agnus opened the distance with him. Agnus started to get angry at the sight.

"This is a poor side effect of Bentao's Mockery."

That's right. The reason Bentao's Mockery was scary was because their health was switched. The frenzied effect wasn't anything worth bragging about. However, Grid became helpless in the frenzied state. He was garbage that couldn't be tied together with Kraugel and Ares.

"Fake bastard."

The first player to become a king? It was a feat purely because he got a legendary class. Grid himself was insignificant. Agnus felt disappointed and once again reached out to Grid approaching him. Then.

*Peeng!*

One of the numerous titles of Baal, the 'Destruction King' was imperfectly reproduced. Agnus' normal attack was turned into a 'shoot with a charging effect.' Thanks to this, Grid couldn't reach Agnus and there was only one second left on the immortality. The moment he aimed at Grid.

[Tiramet's Belt has been equipped.]

As soon as he entered the immortal state, he could quickly replace and swap items.

[You have suffered 1,400 damage.]

[Your health has dropped below 10%. Tiramet's Power is activated. 30% of your health has been restored.]

[The duration of immortality is over.]

*Yiing-*

Grid's empty health gauge suddenly rose by one-third. This wasn't the end. Since becoming Pagma's Descendant, he had acquired the 'composure' state and steadily grew through the production of items and acquisition of titles. Composure was a stat that increase the recovery rate from status conditions. Originally this stat wasn't useful for Grid, who was completely resistance to all conditions, but not at this moment.

[You have regained your composure.]

[You have overcome the frenzied state.]

"Pagma's Swordsmanship! Transcended Link."

*Kurururung!*

Grid struck Agnus with a medium to long distance skill containing overwhelming power.

"?!"

Agnus was surprised when confronted with dozens of energy blades. The top rankers were also quick to overcome status conditions, but Grid's speed was extremely fast.

'Is this the strength of a production class?'

Grid was able to raise the composure stat that general combat classes found difficult raise due to Item Creation. This was the result.

"But so what?"

Agnus still wasn't smiling. He was already disappointed with Grid. He couldn't feel any pleasure from Grid.

*Kwaaaaang!*

The magic wave that came from Agnus' lich collided with Grid's energy blades, causing a storm that destroyed the battlefield.

◇ ◇ ◇

"Grid!"

Jishuka turned pale when she saw Grid's health gauge in the party window fall dramatically. She wanted to go to help Grid right away, but it was impossible. Black was the reason.

"Where are you looking?"

*Pajjik!*

Black created a magician clone and fired a lightning spell at Jishuka. It was poison to the archer Jishuka, whose defensive ability was weak.

"Ugh."

Jishuka revealed a gap due to the electric shock that lasted for a while. Another warrior clone flew at her and stabbed with the sword, but the attack came to naught. It was due to Pon's obstruction.

"Rain Spear!"

*Chwarururuk!*

Black's warrior clone swung a spear in order to block the dozens of spears summoned by Pon. He rode on a white horse and faced Black with a cold gaze.

"You trash-like man...! You males only look at pretty girls!!"

*Kwaang!*

After joining Immortal, Black had focused on raising her level with the help of the necromancers. Her ability to protect her body using clones was strengthened, so she didn't care about Pon's Rain Spear. Pon clicked his tongue at her shout.

"I don't judge females based on their appearance. I like everything about women."

"Lies! Shut up!"

"No, in the first place, we're enemies, while Jishuka is an ally... Ack?"

Black's illusions changed the stage of the battle. The bloody palace filled with corpses was turned into a steep canyon. It was a terrain that blocked Pon. Pon's attack power on a horse would rapidly fall while the water would tie up Jishuka and Pon.

The situation of Euphemina and Regas also wasn't good.

"All young and beautiful women should die!"

"Kyaaak!"

The martial artist who surpassed Asura Regas, White! She could change her body size and weight freely when using martial arts, making her the power of a sun. She showed no signs of being pushed, despite facing Euphemina and Regas at the same time.

'Why is this crazy woman so angry at me?'

Euphemina barely escaped from White's attack with Regas' help and sighed with relief. She couldn't understand the psychology of White. Didn't they meet for the first time today? Why did she feel like a bad person? White aimed for Euphemina until the end.

"I can't believe your white skin and curly hair!!"

"Kyaaak!"

Euphemina was in a hurry to escape. Was it because she judged she couldn't beat White? No. Victory wouldn't be easy, but she didn't think it was impossible. The lich Mumud was what Euphemina cared about right now. She had the quest 'Mumud's Soul Liberation' and was waiting for Agnus to summon the lich Mumud.

However, Agnus summoned two different liches and never called Mumud. It was irritating and frustrating from Mumud's position.

'This is a golden chance to clear the quest.'

Euphemina continued to look towards Grid and Agnus. White snorted.

"Aren't all pretty women foxes? You are looking at Grid because you are expecting Grid to help you? You are too incompetent, leaning on a man."

"What?"

Euphemina's round eyes narrowed. She had these eyes when she annihilated Faker's party in the past.

"L-Lady Euphemina?"

Regas jolted with surprise. It was because he felt the scent of Jishuka from Euphemina. Regas didn't know. The fundamental reason why Grid feared Euphemina was because Euphemina had a temper.

"Should I kill this white pig-like woman before doing the quest?"

"W-White pig?"

"Stop. I'm annoyed."

"...!!"

"Protect Grid!"

Grid was already a symbol. If Agnus defeated Grid during his debut appearance, Agnus' momentum would grow out of control. Ares didn't want Agnus to grow any more. But.

"It's impossible!"

No one was able to carry out Ares' command. It was due to the power of the skeleton army summoned and controlled by the necromancer rankers belonging to Immortal. In particular, Veradin was an eyesore. Veradin's death knight wasn't as destructive as Agnus' death knight, but it was more delicate. Agnus controlled two death knights and liches at the same time, while Veradin only focused on one death knight. This was a strength.

"Veradin!"

Scott couldn't ignore the growing loss of troops and tried to change the battlefield. He decided to concentrate on fighting Veradin with all his power. Veradin narrowed his eyes as he blocked the attack.

"It's unpleasant to see your low-key ID."

"I will change it when I get an ID change ticket!"

*Chaaeng!*

*Chaaeng!*

Veradin's death knight and Scott's sword collided in the air several times. Both of them struck each other, ultimately leading to Scott's disadvantage. The death knight was steadily restored with Veradin's magic power while Scott was unable to overcome the stamina limitations of a player.

The Overgeared King and God of War were in a crisis. The strength of Agnus' force was overwhelming. The viewers were now aware of it.

# Chapter 661

"Why doesn't he use his knight summoning skill?"

The Overgeared members watching the TV all over the world were irritated. They wanted Grid to summon his knights right away to show the true majesty of the Overgeared King. Yes, Grid was a king. There was no need for him to fight one on one. Even if he didn't move himself, his soldiers and knights would defeat his enemies.

But Grid didn't take advantage of his king's status.

"Just summoning Piaro is sufficient..."

"If Grid is defeated, the dignity of the Overgeared King..."

The Overgeared members were irritated and nervous. Many of those keeping an eye on the TV belonged to the Overgeared Two Guild. That's right. Those who joined Overgeared after Grid became a duke weren't familiar with Grid's depths.

Duke Grid and King Grid were great men who worried and acted for the comfort of his forces, but his personality was barely repressed. Grid was a selfish person. In addition, there was a lot of greed. His past trauma was too strong. He always wanted to prove himself.

It wasn't possible for him to summon the knights in a one on one match watched by the whole world.



'Shit, it's going to be a confrontation.'

Prior to aiming Transcended Link at Agnus, Grid had swapped the Holy Light set to physical resistance armor such as Triple Armor. Transcended Link released 20 energy blades and the power of each one was very good. It had already been shown several times, so Grid judged that people would think it was one of his special moves, including Agnus.

Grid thought that Agnus would be very wary of Transcended Link. He would avoid it and try to defend with the lich's mana shield, while counterattacking with the death knight at the same time. But he was wrong. Agnus' lich was far better than he thought. He counterattacked at the same time as offsetting Grid's Transcended Link with double casting.

"Cough! Cough!"

Grid was hit with an ice blast that made its way through the Transcended Link storm. He resisted the frozen state and hurriedly pulled out a potion. Agnus snorted at the blood-stained armor.

"If you don't have skills then you should be honest. Aren't you digging your own grave by making random predictions?"

Agnus was once again disappointed with Grid. Grid's behavior of guessing the lich's attack and suffering damage by himself was a joke.

"You don't have Kraugel's analytical power and senses... Hah! Now that I've seen you, Kraugel is just a pup! He was actually hit by you!"

Agnus stopped the lich's double casting. It wasn't suitable for a long battle because Agnus had quick casting speed but low total mana.

"Finish it, Cao."

Agnus turned his back on Grid. Once he commanded the big death knight called Cao, Cao flashed with a purple light. Cao was a death knight made from one of the top 10 orc warriors. His senses were somewhat dull but he boasted remarkable strength and attack power. Agnus judged that Cao could defeat the already tired Grid. It was enough to tear at Grid's pride.

"From the beginning... You spoke a lot of dirty words."

Grid's health had fallen to 10,000. Yet there were no signs of frustration on his face. It was natural. Grid hadn't used everything yet. Frustration was for a person who lost everything. He might've lost his immortality, but Grid still had a lot left over.

"Blackening."



*Kakiing.*

This was a skill that belonged to the legendary rated accessory, 'Dark Bus' Earrings.' The cooldown was 12 hours, while the duration of the skill was only five minutes. It meant there were restrictions on the use. Any skills with large restraints were strong.

*Kuwaaaang!*

Explosive demonic power! Grid's skin turned pale and the whites of his eyes became black. Grid's appearance was like a demon as demonic power wrapped around him like a haze. It was the emergence of the blackened version of Grid that provided fear and despair to constant enemies.

『It finally came!』

The commentators and viewers were excited.

"You have become a bit stronger. So what?"

Agnus scoffed. Grid intercepted the death knight Cao with his increased agility and the use of Blackening.

*Jeeeong!*

Cao's greatsword scattered a purple light as it hit Grid's chest.

[Death Knight Cao has inflicted 1,940 damage to the target.]

"What?"

Agnus' eyes widened. Agnus himself didn't know it. It was the first time he was surprised in Satisfy. He hadn't been so surprised even when he first met Kraugel.

"There isn't even 2,000 damage?"

Grid shook off Cao's attack while advancing and narrowing the distance to Agnus.

Grid's physical defense was extremely shocking after wearing Triple Layers, Lantier's Cloak, etc.

"You...!"

Agnus smiled again. He stared at Grid with a provocative gaze and focused energy on his fingertips. But he couldn't release that energy. He couldn't swing his arms.

"Restraint."

"...!!"

There was a powerful deterrent. Agnus couldn't move and subconsciously flinched away from Grid. The death knight Cao hurriedly chased after Grid and swung his sword.

[Death Knight Cao has inflicted 1,670 damage to the target.]

[Death Knight Cao has inflicted 1,910 damage to the target.]

[Death Knight Cao has inflicted...]

...

...

As an orc, Cao had better basic abilities and fewer skills. The basic attacks without any clear attack skills couldn't stop Grid.

"Kuk...!"

Agnus burst out into laughter that was similar to a groan.

*Peok! Peok! Peok!*

He felt evil from Grid's eyes as he ignored the death knight.

"Specta... cular!"

*Sakak-!*

The +9 Failure cut Agnus' body diagonally. Pinnacle.

[You have suffered 35,400 damage.]

[The Mana Shield is working. You have dealt with the loss of life with the loss of mana.]

[You have taken a high grade mana potion.]

“Kuock! Heeok?”

He seemed shaky and barely upright, but Agnus managed to catch his breath. He confirmed that Grid was linking the next attack and burst into laughter again.

“Kuk...! Kuhahahahahat! I didn't expect you to be disappointing, because you defeated Kraugel!”

Yes, this was why fighting was fun. It was the breathtaking feeling of walking on a tightrope. The slightest mistake would mean death! The excitement that made him forget reality rose!

“Veradin! I'll leave Ares to you!”

Agnus shouted as got rid of the death knight 'Doom' and lich 'Amy' putting Ares in check. It was to have spare 'Domination' stats. The reason? He needed to summon a super worker who required a large amount of magic power.

“Lich summon, Mumud!”

*Jjejeok.*

The gap between Grid and Agnus was split apart.

*Kieeeeeeeek-!*

There was the roar of a monster and magic power rose from the cracked space.

*-Avoid it!*

Braham's urgent cry entered Grid's ear as he was attacking Agnus with Pinnacle Kill. It was the same as when the yangban Garam appeared so Grid's alertness rose to the extreme. But.

'How do I avoid this?'

It was during the development of the swordsmanship. It wasn't possible to avoid the magic that sprang out from a space created in front of him. Grid had only one choice. Just before the magic hit him, use Pinnacle Kill to hurt Agnus. He only aimed for this. He didn't know if they would die together or if only one of them would die.

"Pinnacle Kill!"

Immediately before the magic power reached Grid's chin. Shortly before Grid hit Agnus with the finished Pinnacle Kill.

[★ Hidden Quest ★ 'Braham and Mumud' has been created!]

"...?!"

"...!!"

Grid and Agnus' eyes widened at the same time. It was because both of them acquired the same quest and were seeing different notification windows.

[Braham has perceived Mumud's soul and is filled with a burning desire. He had consumed a soul fragment and forcibly invoked Assimilation.]

[You have become one with Braham's soul. Control of your body has been given to Braham... It has failed.]

[Consuming the soul fragment has dealt a very powerful blow to Braham. Braham's soul has fallen asleep. You have to control Assimilation manually.]

[Braham's basic stats have weakened.]

[Your class has been changed to Great Magician and your stats will be readjusted.]

[Braham has something to say to Mumud. Lich Mumud's magic power is cut and neutralized by up to 30%.]

Energy escaped from his body. The black hair turned as white as snow while the eyes became red like rubies.

"Ugh! B-Braham!"

The energy disappeared like it was a lie and Grid struggled to readjust.

[You can feel Mumud's hatred, who has sensed Braham's soul. The stat that you have suppressed with your resisting heart is temporarily freed.]

[Lich Mumud's level is increase to 400.]

[Control Mumud and fight against the Legendary Great Magician Braham. Give Mumud the title of a new legend.]

[If you defeat Braham and resolve Mumud's grudge, the future Mumud will become your faithful servant.]

"Hat...! *Kihahahahahat!*"

Agnus was having too much fun.

# Chapter 662

"Kyaaaak!"

It wasn't a scream. They were shouts of joy from women watching the confrontation between Grid and Agnus. It was due to the bewitching appearance of the white-haired Grid. As if his whole skeleton had changed, Grid had thinner lines and became beautiful. The sleek appearance and eye-catching appearance of the young Barahm invoked the protective instincts of women.

◇ ◇ ◇

Name: Braham Eshwald (Grid)

Class: Great Magician

Title: Possessor of Great Knowledge

\* The best intellectual of this time. The truth hasn't been learnt yet, so he is still obstinate. This pursuit of knowledge is very strong, sometimes acting as a poison.

\* Intelligence will rise by 35%.

\* There is a low probability of running wild.

Title: One who Became a Legend

...

Level: 400 (Correction)

Health: 100,000/100,000 (Correction)

Mana: 200,000/200,000 (Correction)

Strength: 158 Stamina: 1,400

Agility: 601 Intelligence: 7,000+2,100

\* In this human flesh, Braham Eshwald's full strength can't be drawn out. Most of his stats are sealed.

\* Braham's soul is shocked and has fallen asleep. You have control over your body. The stats have been sealed to a greater extent.

'At this point, he's just a troll.'

It was the 2nd big incident that Braham caused. Braham had caused his defeat during his confrontation with Kraugel. Now it happened again. At a crucial moment when a quest was forcibly invoked, he fell asleep?

'He wants to fuck with people... '

*Shake shake.*

Grid shook his head. He couldn't afford to complain. Grid's head was spinning as he secured a safe distance from Agnus and confirmed his status window.

'Level 400, 9,000 intelligence, 100,000 and 200,000 resources... '

It wasn't a level that ordinary players could grasp. It was just like when his body was adjusted for the quest during his first Assimilation experience with Braham.

'Then can't I beat Agnus in one blow?'

This thought swept through Grid's mind.

'No, it can't be solved that easily,'

Grid faced reality.

Agnus had the lich, Mumud. In addition, the subject of this quest was Mumud. Grid expected that Mumud's stats would be corrected by the quest.

'My specs right now are highly likely to coincide with Mumud's.'

Agnus probably had the same quest as Grid. Yes, the conditions of both of them would be comparable. Then there was a serious problem.

‘Agnus has a lot of experience controlling Mumud. On the other hand, myself...’

Grid didn’t have experience controlling the Assimilation state. It was because the control of his body was passed to Braham every time Assimilation was used. Grid was forced to watch the assimilated Braham from the perspective of a third party, so Assimilation was an unfamiliar state for him.

‘And in the first place...’

Blacksmith and swordsman. He wasn’t a magician.

‘Can i handle a magician class well?’

Along with the assassins, a magician was considered to be one of the most difficult classes. It took a lot of wits to be able to use magic with different casting speeds at the right time. It was a bad class for the dumb Grid who was only good at physical things.

“Sigh.”

Grid shook his head. He tried to suppress the tension and anxiety. The quest suddenly appeared, creating a lull in the battle. He needed to remain calm. The moment Grid was trying to regain his mind.

*Ttiring~*

There was a sound and the contents of the quest appeared.

[Braham and Mumud]

### ★ Hidden Quest ★

Braham was jealous of Mumud. He couldn’t tolerate a disciple who had more talent than himself. He started neglecting Mumud and even took away his achievements. In the end, he decided to kill Mumud. It was a foolish judgment that arose from the idea that he should reign as the supreme being on Earth.



But Braham didn't harm Mumud. No, he couldn't harm Mumud. Braham had lived as a human for hundreds of years. Braham awakened emotions without knowing it.

One day, Mumud suffered from an incurable disease and left Braham.

After a long time, Braham found him again.

There was a short explanation. It was followed by a single video.

"Even when you turned away from me... I didn't blame you when you interfered with my achievements and erased my name from the world."

The underwater city of Siren.

Two men stood facing each other with the dark and mysterious sea as the background. They were Braham and Mumud. The vampire Braham was still young and beautiful, while the skinny Mumud looked like he had lost his vitality.

*Cough cough!*

He coughed up blood every time he spoke, but he didn't stop speaking.

"I'm sorry that you suffer from such a terrible obsession that you would become afraid of your disciple... I pitied you and couldn't blame you..."

"..."

"...But now I resent you. Turning me into a lich...? Do you want me to serve you even after I am dead...? I won't be able to rest!!"

Tears fell from Mumud's eyes. His eyes were filled with hatred as he said coldly.

"Isn't life meant for death anyway? It would be better for me to disappear naturally than to be a lich."

Grid's heart stung as he watched the video. He could sense Braham's feelings.

'Actually, I wanted to save you.'

'I feel sorry for you.'

'I want the heavens to see your talent, even if you're dead.'

That's right. Braham felt guilty about being jealous of Mumud and ruining his life. He missed Mumud, the only person in the world who trusted and followed him. Braham wanted to make up for the sins he committed, but Mumud was about to die at an age that wasn't even over 30. He wanted to make Mumud a lich and raise Mumud's reputation in the world. But Braham's pride was too high to speak his heart. He thought he wasn't qualified to sympathize with Mumud. In the first place, the idea of making Mumud a lich wasn't normal. Due to his own desires, he murdered his kin and was banished from the vampire world as a result. He was a crooked existence that couldn't be understood by vampires or humans.

"You... You're the worst even to the end. With the handful of magic power I have left, I will kill you... Cough! Cough!"

"...You don't have much time left. Accept the honor of being a lich. The moment Pagma completes the Vessel of the Soul, I will reclaim my immortality and you will be by my side. You will be praised by all, even if you're dead."

"Don't...!"

"You don't have veto rights. The day you die, I will remove your body from its grave and resurrect you as an immortal."

It was the end of the video. There was no need to speak about what happened afterwards. The current Mumud was a lich. This was proof that Braham made his decision. There was a problem.

'Agnus stole Lich Mumud.'

It was also in front of the watching Overgeared members. It was shortly after Grid fought with Elfin Stone in the vampire city.

'How rotten.'

Grid only knew about what happened between Agnus and Braham after Euphemina got the quest to liberate Mumud's soul. He felt a sense of discomfort and asked the sleeping Braham.

‘Braham, what do you want to say to Mumud now?’

Well, Grid didn’t need an answer. Grid already knew Braham’s heart.

‘It is obvious... You want to apologize to Mumud after belatedly realizing how wrong you were. Right?’

Of course, it didn’t make sense to apologize now. Mumud already tasted a great deal of pain that was irreversible. Mumud didn’t have to feel forgiveness after Braham’s apology. Even if he did forgive, the pain that Mumud experienced wouldn’t be erased.

‘Braham knows this as well.’

Grid looked back at the dictionary meaning of Assimilation. Different things becoming similar to each other. Yes, Grid and Braham were different. But they read each other’s thoughts and feelings during the assimilation process and changed little by little. Thanks to Grid, Braham now understood humans.

Whether Mumud accepted his apology or not...

Braham still thought he should apologize to Mumud. It was clearly the responsibility of the one who committed the sin.

“Yes... That is a man.”

Grid recalled Lee Junho, who used to torment him in his school days. What if Lee Junho came to him and apologized for the mistakes of the past? The pain of the past wouldn’t disappear, but it might resolve a little bit. The darkness in his heart could be lifted.

“...I will try it.”

It wasn’t for Braham. It was for his quest and for the sake of the victim, Mumud.

‘I have to win.’

He firmly made up his mind. Then he checked the list of spells he could use now.

On the other hand, Agnus.

“Kukukuk... Yes, Mumud, you were also a stupid fool.”

Agnus laughed as he verified the contents of the quest from Mumund's position. The laugh had a different feeling from usual. Agnus's laugh was filled with a terrible anger.

"Stupid blockhead."

He was a fool. The victim was a fool. Agnus hated the weak and victims. He was reminded of himself in the past. Agnus grabbed Mumud's skull with a thin hand and whispered.

"Victims only have two choices. Go away or get revenge."

Forget everything and just live? It wasn't living. If they ignored the past, they couldn't move forward. It was being deprived of their body and soul.

"Kill Mumud. Clear away the past and break away from it. This time, you... We will trample on them."

*Shaaaaaaaaah-*

Lich Mumud's magic power exploded. It was the new concept of magic that contained seven attributes. Agnus was determined to win from the start, using the highest-rated magic available to the level 400 Mumud. Then what about Grid?

"Fireball. Wind Cutter."

"...?"

Using only the lowest level magic? Agnus was puzzled by Grid's unusual response.

*Puaaaaaaaaaah!*

Before the magic was completed, Mumud was hit by flames and a dark blade. Fireball and Dark Cutter penetrated the lich's Mana Shield!

"What?"

Agnus felt panicked. He didn't understand the situation as Grid looked at Belial's Staff.

"This is a myth rated item, bastard."

Intelligence rose by 30%. Magic casting speed rose by 30%. He could cast three types of magic at the same time. However, proficiency was required. When fire and dark magic are cast simultaneously, the magic power of each one was increased by 200%. Magic critical chance was increased by 20%. Magic critical damage was increased by 150%, etc.

This was Belial's Staff.

Agnus had only hunted the weakened great demons and didn't know about the power and extent of myth rated items.

# Chapter 663

[Mana Shield Lv. 6]

When attacked, mana is consumed instead of health. However, only 68% of your defense and magic resistance is available.

When casting a spell, the function of Mana Shield is incomplete. During magic casting, the Mana Shield will be penetrated if more than 30,000 damage is dealt.

\* Can be turned ON/OFF without a cooldown time.

These were the specifications of the level 400 Mumud's Mana Shield. In addition, Mumud was a lich who had close to infinite magic power, so his mana was close to 500,000. There was something else.

[Mumud's Knowledge]

Increases magic casting speed by 15% and mana regeneration rate by 30%.

Mumud also had basic skills like this. It was enough to convince Agnus to have Mumud cast high level magic from the beginning of the battle. Yes, Agnus interpreted the present Mumud as an invincible being. Mumud would take 5~7 seconds to cast the high level spell and Agnus thought Mumud would be able to withstand any attacks during that time.

But the result? Grid's casting speed of the lowest level magic was three times faster than Mumud and the power was enough to penetrate the Mana Shield.

[Lich Mumud has suffered 37,300 damage!]

[Lich Mumud has lost 30,000 mana!]

[Lich Mumud has suffered 7,300 damage!]

'Mumud really received this type of damage from Fireball and Dark Cutter?'

Mumud's current intelligence was as high as 10,000. Mumud's magic resistance was high enough to absorb most damage from the 1st ranking magician. But in front of Grid's magic, Mumud's magic resistance was useless. Agnus' eyes twisted before he laughed.

'This is Braham's strength... I have to acknowledge it!'

Agnus finally raised his rating of Grid. This was the first player to acquire the legendary class of Pagma's Descendant and then Braham's power. Agnus decided that Grid's 'quest progression' would be unique.

'If Kraugel is a genius at combat, Grid has the talent to understand and use the game's worldview and story.'

The truth was very different, but Agnus was forced to overestimate Grid. It was because he could only interpret the existence of a person who could use the power of two legends as a bugged player. Agnus shook with thrill. His smile curved from ear to ear as Grid spoke.

"This is a myth rated item, bastard."

"I... tem!"

*Kwaaaang!*

Grid once again cast Fireball. Before Lich Mumud finished casting the S grade unique magic, Grid was already using his third spell. Of course, from a common sense perspective, the lowest rated Fireball would be no threat to Mumud. It was impossible to get through a lich's Mana Shield with the lowest rated magic. But the destructive power of Grid's Fireball was so beyond common sense that Agnus was nervous.

‘Is a Fireball that deals at least 20,000 damage coming again?’

The damage suffered when Fireball and Dark Cutter hit at the same time exceeded 37,000. Agnus thought that he would suffer 20,000 damage from Fireball alone.

*Peeeeeeong!*

[Lich Mumud has suffered 8,800 damage!]

[Lich Mumud has lost 8,800 mana.]

‘Huh?’

The power of Fireball was much weaker than before?

‘Was the first spell a critical hit?’

Agnus regained his reason and stood in front of Mumud. It was in order to shield Mumud while the spell casting finished. On the other hand, Grid was suffering.

[The double casting of Fireball and Dark Cutter has failed.]

‘How rotten!’

Belial’s Staff had a fraudulent option that made Triple Casting possible. But it was an option that could only be used when supported by proficiency. For Grid, it was absolutely impossible to do Triple Casting.

‘Double casting... ’

He had to call out Fireball with his mouth and Dark Cutter in his mind, which was difficult for him. The first time he succeeded was purely... A coincidence.



'I should grab 100 people passing by and have them try it.'

Maybe all 100 out of 100 would fail. The difficulty of double casting was high.

'Should I use high level magic?'

The current Grid was wearing almost all his overgeared items. There was Neberius's Bracelet which increased the wearer's intelligence by 30 and shorted magic casting time by 20%. The Black Quartz Earrings increased the wearer's intelligence by 15%. The Ring of Absurdity increased the wearer's mana regeneration rate by two times and reduced the resources consumed by magic and skills by half. Malacus' Cloak increased the wearer's intelligence by 200 and gave off a bloody smell. The Holy Light Crown raised his intelligence by 300 and his dignity by 200. There was also Belial's Staff.

In order to take full advantage of the power of a magician, Grid pulled out all the products that were effective. In addition, there were the dozens of magic spells that could be used at level 400. That's right. The current abilities of the magician Grid weren't lacking compared to Lich Mumud. He might even be ahead. The reason why Grid only used the lowest level spells was for efficiency. Basic spells like Magic Missile, Fireball, and Dark Cutter only took one or two seconds to cast, while the casting time increased as the rating went up.

'It's too risky to cast long spells when I'm unfamiliar with the magic.'

Every spell had an antagonistic attribute. There weren't just simple attack spells, but those that showed all types of functions. The probability of being countered was extremely high, as utilization was unlimited. It meant that a battle involving magic was a psychological war. The only magic that Grid had used was Magic Missile, Fly, and Alarm.

Could the not intelligent Grid fight efficiently using various spells in real time? It was impossible. His opponent was Agnus. He had a lich skilled in using magic. It was highly likely that Grid would be defeated in a psychological war with him.

'So.'

Grid planned to take advantage of the option of Belial's Staff where additional damage would be dealt if he used both fire magic and dark magic at the same time. He wanted to avoid a psychological warfare by using only the lowest level magic, which was close

to immediate magic, in order to push Lich Mumud. However, reality wasn't that easy.

"Fireball!"

'Dark Cut... Ball!'

"Fire...! Dark!"

'Damn!'

It was really difficult to cast Fireball and Dark Cutter at the same time. He was convinced that double casting wasn't an area for players.

"This is why... The title of a great magician will be the exclusive property of NPCs.

*Pepeng!*

*Peng!*

Fireball and Dark Cutter were deployed separately to attack Mumud. The power was so weak that it couldn't be compared to when cast at the same time. This meant it couldn't penetrate the Mana Shield. Grid's nervousness reached the peak.

*Kiyaaaaaaah!*

Under the protection of Agnus and the Mana Shield, Lich Mumud finished casting his magic. Magic power exploded and headed towards Grid.

"God Hands!"

Grid called out but he had become a great magician thanks to Assimilation. The God Hands were the dedicated item of Pagma's Descendant and didn't respond to Grid's call. In the end, Grid had to endure Mumud's attack with his own strength.

'What should I stop?'

Mumud cast magic that Grid had never seen before. The power and effects couldn't be predicted. But it was clearly top rated magic if it took eight seconds to cast.

'I have to unconditionally stop it.'

Grid quickly pulled something out from the magic list he had checked before. The defense magic list. Among them, there was a spell that exerted extreme magic resistance.

“Anti-magic Shield!”

[Increases magic resistance by 50% for 10 seconds.]

[Defends against one magic attack.]

*Chwaaaaaak!*

A pink transparent curtain wrapped around Grid’s body.

*Jjeejeeong!*

Like a comet, a flash of glowing light hit the pink curtain. Then...

The pink curtain shattered. The prismatic flash that boasted seven colours now had only six colours. A chill went down Grid’s spine.

‘Multi-hit magic...!’

The flashing prism. It seemed like one spell but it was actually seven types of spells separated by seven attributes.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

Mumud’s magic flew through the anti-magic shield and exploded as it collided against Grid’s chest. The explosion was so huge that the ground where Grid was standing disappeared like it was hit by a meteorite.

“...”

“G-Grid...”

Through the dust generated by the explosion, they could see the silhouette of the struggling Grid. He was being burned, frozen, covered with dirt, blown by the wind, pierced by a flash. Grid received different types of damage at once. It was a scene that caused goose bumps.

Lich Mumud. Those who knew about him and those who first came to know about him today... everyone was thrilled. This was Mumud's magic. It was enough to invoke silence on the chaotic battlefield.

"Kukuk...!"

How much time passed? Both the viewers and those on the battlefield foresaw Grid's death as the stillness lasted for a moment or maybe an eternity. Someone's unpleasant laughter broke the silence. It was Agnus' laughter.

"Kuhahahahahat!" Okay! Very good! Hahahahahat!"

Agnus sought the pleasures of the moment. He wanted to forget the terrible reality by receiving new stimuli. For example, today's encounter with Grid was the best.

"You having Braham's soul... It will be the stepping stone for Mumud's growth!! Kuk! Kukuk! Griddddd! More! Jump further! Give me more!!!"

*Peeng!*

*Pepepepeng!*

Lich Mumud aimed a spell at the silhouette of Grid in the dust. Most of the viewers saw this action as the killing shot. It was because the power that Mumud used before was too strong for Grid to recover so quickly. At that moment.

"...Why didn't I think of this sooner?"

The storm caused by the aftermath of Mumud's magic. The appearance of the wounded Grid was revealed. Over his left shoulder, 10 fireballs were lined up while there were 10 black blades over his right shoulder. It was like wings of fire and darkness.

"...?"

The viewers, Ares members, Overgeared members and Agnus didn't understand the meaning of Grid's appearance. But Lich Mumud...

*Flinch.*

He was learning. Among the enhanced magic that Braham redefined, it was the second coming of the Alarm magic that showed the most efficiency.

# Chapter 664

Satisfy boasted graphics more colorful than any game or movie. The effects that occurred every time skills or magic was used were beautiful and glamorous. The players who used brilliant skills and magic became the objects of envy.

“Wings...?”

The left side was blazing red flames and the right side was dark wings. The viewers and everyone on the battlefield looked at the white-haired Grid with wings. The sight of a player with opposing wings captured everyone’s admiration.

“Kik...”

Agnus still maintained his concentration during a time when everyone else were fascinated. He quickly grasped the situation and took measures to cope with it.

"Flying magic that contains a bombardment capability... is it?"

Agnus thought that Grid would fly. It wasn’t a hasty conclusion. It was a rational conclusion since wings were a tool for flying in the sky.

"Raincoat."

*Chwarururuk!*

Agnus used a skill attached to the Rune of Death and dozens of magic shields were created above him. It was the strongest anti-air defense magic. Agnus was prepared for Grid to attack from the sky. This was a mistake.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

“...!!”

Grid didn’t fly.

He waved his wings firmly while standing on the ground. At the same time, he released

a line of fire magic and dark magic at Lich Mumud.

'Fireball and Dark Cutter?'

He never imagined that the magic that looked like wings was actually a multi-deployment Fireball and Dark Cutter. Agnus belatedly realized his misjudgment, hurried to turn off the anti-air defense and raised bodies around him. It was an attempt to use a body shield.

But.

*Pepepepeng!*

"Kuk...!"

It was too late. Due to the time gap between the release of the anti-air defense magic, the deployment of the body shield was delayed!

'Shit!'

Agnus cursed as 10 pairs of Fireball and Dark Cutter narrowly made it past the bodies. He lost his composure for a moment as there was a strong explosion.

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

[Lich Mumud has suffered 38,100 damage!]

[Lich Mumud has suffered 36,860 damage!]

[Lich Mumud has suffered 37,500 damage!]

[Lich Mumud...]

...

...

" ... "

The lich was the culmination of the undead. But this was a story for when it existed as an independent object. The moment it belonged to a player, the power of a lich became extremely limited. The problem wasn't the weakening of stats, but the limits of the command system. During real-time combat, it was very difficult for a player to instruct the worker in detail about certain actions, resulting in extremely low potential for the worker.

Of course, players with outstanding concentration and wits were able to deliver high quality commands to the worker, but this was in a situation where they were able to do that. It was virtually impossible to deliver high-quality commands during combat with an unpredictable opponent. It was difficult to respond to constantly changing variables and a gap was eventually revealed.

Just like Agnus right now.

'I was too impatient. I should've instructed Mumud to defend.'

It was too early to judge that Grid's attack would come from the sky. No, it was a mistake to be overconfident that he could protect Mumud from Grid's attacks. Agnus commanded Mumud to cast attack magic and as a result, Mumud was exposed to Grid's magic and suffered a serious injury.

The 10 pairs of Fireball and Dark Cutter caused Mumud to lost 30,000 mana and 70,000 health with every hit. Now Mumud had 50,000 health remaining and 170,000 mana.

'The lowest level magic could exert such power... '

It wasn't just high attack power. It required an incredible computing ability to use 20 magic spells simultaneously, even if they were the lowest rated magic.

'Is this Braham's unique characteristic?'

Like Mumud, Braham had his own unique magic style. It wasn't strange if he had increased speed in magic casting and mana recovery. Agnus reached a conclusion.

'This situation is bad for me.'

Mumud's magic was classified as 'high level' magic. Mumud was a magician of mass destruction. On the other hand, Braham was well-rounded. It was possible for him to



use low level magic with unbelievable power and there was no delay between spells. It meant he was specialized. In one on one matches, Braham was ahead of Mumud.

‘My role is important.’

Now Agnus was only focused on the battle in front of him. He had succeeded in completely forgetting the memory of reality that afflicted his mind and soul.

*Sururuk.*

The moment that Agnus calmed down.

“You should stay focused.”

A handsome man with black hair was watching the TV and cheering for Grid. It was Kraugel.



‘Hrmm.’

Agnus commanded Mumud to cancel the casting of the attack magic and to enter the ‘defense’ and ‘evade’ mode. He avoided the Fireballs and Dark Cutters that Grid was launching while continuing to look elsewhere. It was in the direction of the battle between White and Regas and Euphemina. At that moment.

*Peeng!*

Agnus shook as he was hit in the arm by a fireball.

‘...It’s tricky.’

Fireball and Dark Cutter had simple paths as the lowest grade magic. It was relatively easy to avoid the attacks if he didn’t think about counterattacking. However, Grid suddenly used 10 pairs of Fireball and Dark Cutter at the same time. This meant that Agnus was occasionally hit.

On the other hand, Mumud was completely protecting himself with defensive spells. Agnus was relieved by the sight and looked at White again. She was overwhelming Regas, but couldn’t deal the finishing blow. It was because the female magician called

Euphemina interfered with White during important moments. It seemed impossible for White to suppress them alone during a short time.

‘It isn’t useless.’

Agnus pulled out his sword and licked it. Then something amazing happened.

*Pisisik.*

Agnus’ tongue started corroding the sword.

‘What?’

Grid’s eyes shook as he kept using Fireball and Dark Cutter to attack Mumud. He was astonishing by the toxicity contained in Agnus, as the blade was corroded with a lick of the tongue.

At that moment.

*Teong!*

Agnus escaped to the rear. He left Mumud to deal with Grid alone and moved to the place where White was.

“It’s dangerous!”

Grid hurriedly shouted. He thought Agnus was trying to attack Regas and Euphemina. But Agnus wasn’t aiming at them.

*Puok!*

“Kuock!”

Agnus’ sword pierced the abdomen of a woman. It was White.

"Eh?"

Attacking the same side? Everyone was shocked while White’s face distorted. She was the most confused.

"What are you doing?"

Agnus whispered to White.

"Accept your fate."

*Shaaaaah!*

Purple demonic energy emanated from the corroded sword and started to flow through White's veins and muscles. It was the precursor of Death Knight Transformation.

[You have temporarily made the target a death knight.]

[If the target accepts the magic, they will become a death knight and their species will change to the undead. At this point, all stats will increase by 23% and they will have the 'Death Aura' skill. However, they will be extremely vulnerable to divine magic and won't benefit from healing effects.]

Death Knight Transformation. It made a living person into a death knight, giving them the deadly abilities of a death knight. It was a strength that Agnus obtained from clearing a hidden quest. It was a fraudulent power, but it was also risky. The downside of this skill was that...

[Agnus' wants to make you a death knight! Once the duration of Death Knight Transformation is over, you will die and lose experience!]

'Shit!'

The person who became a death knight would receive a huge penalty. No one would accept Death Knight Transformation unless they had a great deal of loyalty towards Agnus. Agnus whispered to the hesitating White.

"If you refuse, I will kill you. Accept it with ease. Yes? Kukuk!"

Death Knight Transformation could also be used on a corpse. However, if a corpse was made into a death knight, the abilities weren't fully applied and Agnus would have to control it directly. It was the next best thing.

"Son of a bitch... Reward me properly later!"

White was caught and couldn't refuse Agnus. She grudgingly accepted the Death Knight Transformation. Then...

*Kiyaaaaaaah!*

*Peeeeeeong!*

White's fist emitted a purple aura and she aimed it at Regas and Euphemina.

"Regas! Euphemina!"

Jishuka and Pon were surprised while facing Black. The power of White was overwhelming after she transformed into a death knight. Grid also seemed to be in danger. Agnus smiled with satisfaction.

"Kikik, this is the power of a necromancer. Isn't that right?"

Death Knight Transformation was a one-time skill with a time limit, but it didn't consume the dominance stat. It was the only way to have a death knight and Mumud, since Mumud consumed a lot of dominance. Agnus was confident. He would tie up Grid's feet with White and then Mumud would cast the ultimate spell, destroying Grid in an instant.

It wasn't just Agnus. All the viewers thought this was Grid's defeat.

"It will soon be over."

Veradin sighed while facing Scott. All the necromancers, including himself, had exerted an excessive amount of power to block the Ares Army. The Ares Army was strong and was likely to counterattack if more time kept passing. Veradin wanted Agnus to end the fight as soon as possible.

'I didn't expect Agnus to waste such a long time on Grid... What?'

The battlefield, which had been balanced for minutes, would now be overturned. Veradin's eyes widened. A shadow was cast on the battlefield where tens of thousands of troops were fighting.

"What...?"

Veradin and the others in Immortal. In addition, all of the Ares members doubted their eyes. They couldn't understand the sight of the massive pillar falling from the sky.

"Free Farming Peak Style, Pounding Mortar."

"...?"

A strange voice entered the ears of all the confused people.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

A pillar fell from the sky. It was a massive force that crushed White who was rushing towards Grid.

"...Eh?"

A pillar suddenly falling from the sky? Death Knight White was killed in one blow? Agnus couldn't close his mouth. His head was blank from the situation he couldn't understand.

"You were the one who called a friend first. Yes?"

"..."

Grid had unleashed hundreds of magic at once and lost a lot of mana. A middle-aged man with a hand plow and sickle stood beside the tired Grid. His name was Piaro. He was now a famous legendary farmer.

"You dare...! Who would dare go against the Overgeared King!?"

*Kuoooooh!*

The fierce Piaro! The grains of the world responded to his anger. Piaro triggered Natural State and narrowed the distance to Agnus in an instant.

“Fated to Perish.”

“...?!”

*Puk!*

A voice filled the silent battlefield.

“N-No...”

“...”

Grid and Euphemina were frustrated.

# Chapter 665

*-I will leave your share, so please don't interfere.*

It was the whisper that Grid had sent to Euphemina immediately after Agnus summoned Lich Mumud. Grid didn't want Euphemina to interfere in his confrontation with Agnus. It was because he wanted to win against Agnus, who was praised as the best, and be reborn as a true master. Euphemina was convinced. She didn't mind Grid's useless pride and respected it.

Thus, she remained silent. She felt sorry for Regas, but she reserved her power and waited for the time when she could leave the battle with White. Grid would call her after showing a satisfactory performance against Agnus. However, this plan was ruined.

"Fated to Perish."

Piario appeared in response to Grid's summons. He broke White with Pounding Mortar and then used the worst technique. The target was Agnus!

*Puk!*

"N-No...!"

The death of the summoner meant the defeat of the familiar. Once Agnus started turning to grey due to the hand plow hitting his forehead, Grid and Euphemina felt despair. It was because it was natural for Mumud to die when Agnus died. That's right. Due to Piario, Grid failed the 'Braham and Mumud' quest, while Euphemina failed to clear her 'Liberate Mumud's Soul' quest.

"D-Damn Piario..."

He was a troll like Braham!

"Ruined... Eh?"

Grid doubted his eyes. It was because the grey covering Agnus had disappeared.

‘The death was cancelled halfway through?’

The concept itself was different from the immortal passive possessed by legends or those who were close to being legends. The immortal passive was a skill that temporarily resisted death, while Agnus had already received the death sentence.

‘How is this possible?’

Agnus’ dismal voice entered the ears of the confused Grid.

“Kuk... Kukuk! I never dreamt that such a big boss monster would show up.”

“ ... ”

Agnus lifted the grey coloration and appeared again. The flesh and muscles of his body were torn apart, exposing his bones. It was like seeing an undead, causing everyone to freeze.

“Summoning knights... You don’t need to control the summoned targets, so it’s the best summoning skill.”

Agnus swept away his green hair that was covered with blood and sweat. Of course, a person needed to have a noble title to be able to summon knights. But he never thought about using the Summon Knights skill in this battle. The players who he had a dominant relationship with were already engaged in battle and the NPCs had finite lives. It was too risky to summon them against the ‘strong’ Grid.

“The bottom line is that your knight is too fraudulent.”

Agnus stared at Piaro. A legendary NPC wasn’t something that players could face at this time. Wasn’t it unbalanced for such a monster to exist as someone’s possession?

‘People think like this when they see me.’

Agnus laughed and remembered the Absolute Domination skill. Absolute Domination. It was a skill that Baal’s Contractor could only use three times. He could make a dead target his servant forever. Thus far, Agnus had only used Absolute Domination once. It was when he took away Lich Mumud from Braham.

‘I want to use this skill... ’



Agnus lips curved up. His eyes were filled with greed as he stared at Piaro. On the other hand, Piaro was looking at Agnus with a fierce hostility.

"The power over death... A dangerous guy."

Agnus' strength was so high that Piaro was alert against it. Piaro saw that if he didn't finish off Agnus now, Agnus would someday strike back at Grid.

"I have to kill you."

*Taack!*

Piaro tightened his grip on his sickle and hand plow.

"Ah, forget about today."

Agnus stepped back. The power of Immortal gathered near Agnus.

*Clack! Clack clack!*

*Clack clack clack!*

*Uwaaaaah-*

A barrier of thousands of skeletons was created. Even Piaro couldn't rush through all of it and had to take a while. Veradin cried out as he broke through the encirclement of Ares troops.

"Agnus, this way!"

"Wait!" Grid called out to the retreating Agnus. "Do you have no pepper? Does it make sense for you to flee? Isn't it shameful?"

"Pepper?"

Agnus froze in place. Grid thought his provocation would work. Unfortunately, Agnus was accustomed to criticism and mockery. He wasn't sensitive enough to respond to Grid's provocation.

"No? Kik!"

*Flap.*

Agnus threw off his robe and revealed his lower body. It was in a skeletal state. It wasn't a good view, causing Grid to flinch and some people to feel nauseous.

"I will delay the game until next time. In any case, the quest doesn't have a time limit. Kukuk!"

Agnus tried to leave his position, but the Overgeared members and Ares troops weren't willing to let him.

"Fly Up!"

The phoenix rose from Jishuka's myth rated Red Phoenix Bow and acted as the signal for the Ares' troops onslaught towards Agnus. But.

"Raincoat. Body Shield."

*Pepepepeok!*

Fly Up! was blocked by Agnus' anti-air spell while the other skills were disabled by Body Shield. Of course, Agnus couldn't stop every skill alone. But Agnus had hundreds of necromancers and their undead numbered in the thousands. It was virtually impossible to break through the undead army that was only focused on defense. Piaro and Euphemina struggled against the skeletons.

"Next time we meet, summon the farmer and you will end up crying."

Agnus used Lich Mumud's magic and retreated quickly. While Immortal was tying up the legs of the Overgeared and Ares members, Agnus left this meaningless comment and exited the battlefield.

[You have failed to defeat Mumud.]

[Braham's promise will have to wait for next time.]



The failure to kill Agnus couldn't be interpreted as a loss. In the first place, Grid's purpose was to help Ares occupy the Belto Kingdom and it was purely a coincidence that they met Agnus.

『As soon as Agnus and Immortal retreated, the Belto Kingdom raised the white flag!』

『God of War Ares has occupied the Belto Kingdom and has become the second player king!』

『It's amazing that a person who possesses a national-level army has remained obscure for so long. I once again realized how wide the world of Satisfy is.』

『In that sense, Agnus is also incredible. He might've been defeated and unable to keep his promise to kill both the Overgeared King and God of War, but his strength was unique.』

『He blocked the Ares Army and elites of Overgeared... To be honest, the impact is bigger than when Kraugel appeared. I don't know how many times I was thrilled watching him.』

『But the conclusion is that Grid is much better. The first king who helped the birth of the second player king will be even higher.』

『The farmer... 』

The stir was huge. The second kingdom of players was born after the Overgeared Kingdom. It also seemed to have a strong relationship with the Overgeared Kingdom, exponentially increasing Grid's influence. Numerous people became alert and fearful of Grid.

The reputation of the Ares Army also soared into the sky. The impact that people received was great because the unknown force had excelled over a kingdom. People suspected there were many hidden forces in addition to the Ares Army...

And...

"If Agnus hadn't consumed power to deal with Ares in the beginning, the outcome of his battle with Grid might've been different."

“In particular, his undead appearance when he reached the point of death was thrilling. Agnus is at least the level of Kraugel.”

“I felt charisma in the way he laughed while sacrificing the same side.”

“Yes... Agnus is the only one. Let's follow Agnus.”

The former Blood Carnival members and other villains were attracted by Agnus' strength and madness. They started to gather around Agnus.



"I'm sorry."

Grid apologized to Euphemina. It was because she lost the opportunity to gain Lich Mumud due to his desires. Euphemina shook her head.

“Don't apologize. In the first place, it's unclear if I could've suppressed Mumud even if I was part of the fight.”

The encounter with Agnus was unexpected. It was pure coincidence in Grid and Euphemina's eyes. It was doubtful that Euphemina, who had consumed a lot of skills dealing with the armored elite troops, would be in good shape against Agnus and Mumud.

“He's too strong.”

Agnus' strength far exceeded everyone's expectations. But there were no shadows on the faces of Euphemina and the Overgeared members as they thought about Agnus. Agnus might be great, but Grid eventually won. The Overgeared members were reassured because Grid was by their side.

However, Grid's expression was dark.

“The crowd was right. If Agnus had all his liches and death knights against me from the start, I would've been less likely to win.”

If the Braham and Mumud quest hadn't occurred, then Grid wouldn't have been a match for Agnus. Grid was able to maintain his status due to the robust compensation effect of the quest.

'Yes, I'm currently weaker than Agnus. I would've lost if it wasn't for Piaro.'

But.

'The next time will be different.'

The darkness on Grid's face lifted. He was reminded of the flexibility of his items.

'It's the greatest advantage of Pagma's Descendant.'

He could create new items. Grid didn't doubt it. It would be much easier to deal with Agnus if he had items for the undead.

'I'm sure. Agnus is different from Kraugel.'

Kraugel's control and senses were a strong foundation that made him feel like a hard wall. But Agnus relied on skills and seemed to have a lot of blind spots. Items were the correct tool to use against skills.

"Then next time..."

He would win. A big smile appeared on Grid's face as he vowed. The game was too fun and there was no time to be bored.



Outside the Belto Kingdom.

*Chik...*

*Chiiiik!*

Agnus was alone and his body started turning to grey. The duration of his half-lich transformation was over.

[You have died.]

[You have lost a large amount of experience.]

“Kik... Kikikik! Grid...”

Agnus wasn't furious, despite his supposedly glorious debut being stained with humiliation. Was there another opponent who had pushed him so far since Kraugel? No.

"Grid! Kihat! Kikikik! Kuhahahat!"

Agnus was happy. He felt gratitude for Grid, who covered his memories of suffering. At the very least, he would be able to sleep soundly tonight.

# Chapter 666

Agnus.

Born in Garmisch-Partenkirchen, Germany, he was constantly harassed by his classmates during his school years. The intensity of the harassment was so high that there were countless horrible stories. Surprisingly, this intense bullying continued even into adulthood.

"Why was he the subject of harassment?"

LaueI asked after reading the papers and the detective lit up a cigarette and replied.

"It was due to his tone of speech."

"Huh? That was the reason?"

LaueI responded like it was absurd. The smoking detective shrugged with a bitter expression.

"It originally doesn't take a lot to annoy people. It's fun to see a soft target be in pain, and then it will become a normal part of life... Well, there's no need to lengthen this story. The thing that should be noted is that Agnus' lover, who was his sole resting place, met a terrible end."

"..."

The contents were terribly cruel. The people who harassed Agnus for many years. No, the trash raped Agnus' lover as a group. It was also in front of Agnus.

"The big shock caused her to eventually commit suicide. From that time on, Agnus changed. He enacted a terrible revenge and was sentenced to 28 years in prison by the court. But thanks to a human rights organization, he only served three years before being released from prison."

"Satisfy was just released when he got out..."

“Agnus’ psychiatrist highly recommended Satisfy as part of his social readjustment program. Since then, Agnus became a so-called gaming addict and the people around him were relieved. They liked the fact that a ticking time bomb was locked into the game.”

“...”

Indeed, there was no better method to ignore reality than a game. Unlike reality, the game world was filled with fun and interesting stories and a fair system that allowed a person to get rewards.

*Dok dok.*

Lauel knocked on the table before grabbing the papers and getting up.

"Thank you."

“I’m getting paid, so I should thank you instead. Call me again the next time you need something. You can come to Seattle at any time.”

“...”

He left the detective and returned to his mansion. Lauel was in deep thought.

◇ ◇ ◇

“Noe, why aren’t you eating?”

“I don’t want to eat, nyang.”

“Why?”

"Why do you care if I don’t eat, nyong?"

“...”

Pets were creatures. Even if they stayed in the pet inventory without doing anything, they needed to eat to survive. In addition, Noe was a pig who was always waiting for meals. Yet he was refusing a meal! Grid felt worried after seeing Noe’s thin belly and asked carefully.



“Is it because I didn’t summon you when I fought Agnus?”

*Flinch.*

Noe’s triangle-shaped eyes twitched. His tail stood upright as he cried out.

“That’s right, nyang! Why, nyang? Why didn’t you call me when you were fighting?”

Noe had long since recognized Grid as a parent. It was natural since Grid was the first person Noe saw when he hatched from the egg and Grid raised him. Noe always wanted to help Grid. He was worried when Grid was fighting against a mighty enemy.

“This body is the best demonic beast of hell! I am the noblest being in this world and you should depend on me! Nyang!”

Noe opened his eyes as big as possible. Grid smiled as he saw Noe’s heart.

“I’m sorry. I won’t forget you in the future. But you should eat.”

Did Grid really forget about Noe? That wasn’t the case. He couldn’t forget about Noe, the strongest pet, while dealing with Agnus. In fact, Grid wanted to summon Noe several times during the battle with Agnus. But Agnus had contracted with Baal, the 1st great demon, and the memphis was a great demon’s pet.

That’s right. Grid was just scared. He was afraid that Noe would be affected by Agnus’ aura and betray him.

‘Betrayal might be too much. However, I can’t rule out the possibility that Noe might be influenced by Agnus.’

There were still too many things Grid didn’t know about Baal’s Contractor.

‘I don’t know much about necromancers, let alone Baal’s Contractor... ’

There were no necromancers in Overgeared. In the first place, necromancer was a class that specialized in solo play and few of them joined guilds.

‘I have to understand necromancers better.’

In particular, he wondered about the structure of a death knight. Grid hunted

monsters and gave their souls to Noe before logging out.



Necromancer. They were magicians who could summon the undead such as skeletons, zombies, ghouls, skeleton warriors, skeleton archers, skeleton magicians, etc. The higher the domination stat, the more undead that could be summoned. In addition, the level of the undead was affected by the summoner's level. An average level 300 necromancer had an estimated 1,500 domination stat. This meant they could summon 150 skeletons or 15 skeleton magicians at the same time.

In other words, the number of the domination stat required for every undead was different. In order to summon a death knight, available for third advancement necromancers, at least 1,000 domination points were required.

Death knights. A death knight was made using the body of a warrior who built up a high reputation during their lifetime. Since the level and skills varied depending on the body used as a material, it was important to secure a body that was strong in life. Once created, the death knight could be used permanently. Like a pet, it could raise its level through hunting. The death knight's tendencies depended on where the stat points were invested after levelling up.

A third advancement necromancer could use the 'Death Knight Production' skill only one time. But people guessed that this would increase with the fourth advancement.

"Agnus, how much of a scam is he?"

Shin Youngwoo clicked his tongue after collecting information about necromancers from various communities. The more he knew about necromancers, the more fraudulent he realized Agnus was.

"There's a reason why people are talking about Agnus these days..."

It was two days after the battle. The people of the world were in a heated debate about Agnus. People were excited and speculated that he would be the owner of the next legendary class after Pagma's Descendant and Sword Saint.

"Not many people know about the hidden growth classes. Hrmm..."

After gathering information about the necromancers and replaying Agnus' combat abilities, Youngwoo turned off the computer. He had a meal and got back into the capsule.

"The Behen Archipelago."

The death knight Lantier guarded the 61st island. He would create items for the undead inspired by his battle with Agnus. Then he would finally conquer the Behen Archipelago and grab Pagma's heritage. Shin Youngwoo had this as his immediate goal. He was convinced that it was a shortcut to a fast increase in strength.

"Login."



Grid didn't waste a single second after connecting to Satisfy. As soon as he connected, he moved to a field outside Reinhardt and summoned the four God Hands, Noe, Randy, and the two Overgeared Skeletons. He had them hunt to gain experience, while he sat down and worked on increasing his tailoring experience. It was almost macro-level... No, it was the level of a necromancer's automatic hunting.

"Item Information."

While stitching, Grid brought up the information about Tiramet's Belt.

[Tiramet's Belt]

Rating: Unique (Growth)

Experience: 58.9%.

\* Reduce damage received by 10%.

\* Stamina +250.

A belt that contains the unique magic power of Vampire Viscount Tiramet. If this belt grows to a legendary rating, the wearer can summon Vampire Viscount Tiramet.

Weight: 13

“58.9%...”

It had been several years in game time since he acquired Tiramet's Belt. But Tiramet's Belt was still stuck at the unique rating. It was really hard to raise it to the legendary level.

“Once I can summon Tirament, it's likely that my attack power will sharply rise.”

Tiramet's tanking ability was one of the highest among the vampires. Grid would be much more stable in battle if he could summon Tiramet.

‘I don't have to give the God Hands an order to defend. Tiramet's bite means I can maximize stability and attack power at the same time.’

Grid started to burn with motivation. Considering the strength of Lantier on the 61st island, the experience of Tiramet's Belt would increase exponentially every time he was hit.

“I need to strike the iron while it is hot.”

Grid started moving without stopping his sewing. He planned to visit Sticks to move to the Behen Archipelago.

‘Wait.’

Grid stopped in place.

He was much stronger than before. But it was still hard to assure victory against Lantier.

‘I have already finished making armor for Lantier... It would be nice to make a new weapon.’

He didn't know how many years he had been using Failure. Grid hadn't been able to produce a famous sword since Failure, to the extent that he was still using Failure after making the most recent Sword Ghost.

‘Hrmm.’

Grid had the materials that he secured from Belial’s raid. In addition, he learned how to use Belial’s accessories properly in the process of creating items for the meritorious retainers. Grid decided to make a sword he had dreamt about. But there was one thing.

‘Belial’s accessories contain too much demonic power to be made into the weapon I need...’

It was unfortunate that using the material of a great demon to make a weapon meant the weapon was specialized for only one characteristic.

‘What if there was a true master weapon that was strong against normal monsters, strong against people, strong against big monsters, and strong against the undead?’

But was such a weapon possible? Right now, the myth rated Red Phoenix Bow and Lifael’s Spear were each specialized in fire and divine power. It was impossible for a perfect all-rounder weapon to exist.

“...No, wait.”

Lightning struck Grid’s mind. An idea surfaced. The hidden skill Item Combination gave him inspiration!

# Chapter 667

“It’s virtually impossible to create an item with all-encompassing effects...”

The myth rated Red Phoenix Bow and Lifael’s Spear only had one attribute. The materials used to make an item were limited, so it was theoretically impossible to create all-rounder items. But the weapon Grid wanted didn’t necessarily have to be ‘all-rounder.’

‘How... Ah!’

The Item Transformation skill passed through Grid’s head, followed by Item Combination and Sword Ghost.

‘Is it possible to make an item that can transform or combine without using the skills?’

Like a detachable Sword Ghost!

‘I have caught a strand!’

The excited Grid noted some of the options and information of Sword Ghost.

[+7 Sword Ghost]

Rating: Legendary

...

...

\* Can be separated into small and large pieces.

\* When separated, the attack power of the small and large piece are applied separately.

...

...

There are two knobs, one in the middle of the blade and one in the bottom, made of drake fangs. Turning the knob in the middle will separate the pieces. In addition, you can deal serious damage to the enemy's mind if you hit the enemy with these knobs.

Since the surface is entirely black and the circumference of the blade and the knob is the same, it isn't easy to distinguish the knob with the naked eye.

...

...

'What if I make multiple Sword Ghosts with different attributes that can be separated and attached?'

It would have the all-purpose ability that he dreamt of! He could use a suitable blade depending on the situation!

'However, the problem is...'

There was an inevitable gap in the process of attaching and detaching the blade. Grid summoned the Sword Ghost from the inventory. Then he separated them and reattached them.

'0.5 seconds for separation and 0.7 seconds for attachment.'

In addition, it took another 0.5 seconds to retrieve a new blade from the inventory.

'Around two seconds...'

This speed was possible because Grid had high dexterity and was familiar with swapping items. An ordinary person would take a minimum of four seconds. But that wasn't comforting.

'All the enemies I have to deal with are far from ordinary.'

Monsters, NPCs, and players. The enemies that Grid had to confront in the future were

all transcendent. Revealing a gap of two seconds to them would be fatal. ‘The protection of the God Hands isn’t absolute and it isn’t possible to summon Tiramet right now.’ He could protect his body with the two Overgeared Skeletons, but it was limited to two attacks in total. It was difficult to rely on them. He couldn’t use the Overgeared Skeletons as a shield forever.

“...Ah?”

Grid suddenly stopped frowning. He succeeded in thinking of a new idea.

‘Silver thread!’

[Silver Thread]

Attack Power: 100~????

Durability: 1,000/1,000

Fragments of silver armor that have been shaped in the blood vessels of the armored needles for many years.

Unlike ordinary silver thread that only has a thin coating of silver, this is made of pure silver. It also contains the powerful magic power of the armored needle.

Depending on the skill level of the user, it can be used in various ways due to its different forms.

\* It is classified as a secondary weapon.

Conditions of Use: Secondary Weapons Mastery Advanced Level 5. More than 2,000 dexterity.

\* The silver thread can be shot quickly if you have more than 2,000 dexterity.

\* If you have more than 2,500 dexterity, you can twist 5 or less strands of silver thread together to create the desired shape.

\* If you have more than 3,000 dexterity, you can twist 10 or less strands of silver thread



together to create the desired shape.

\* If you have more than 4,000 dexterity, the speed at which you can control the silver thread is doubled.

\* If you have more than 5,000 dexterity, you can twist 20 or less...

...

...

\* The silver thread can be used as a material for making items. However, a craftsman level blacksmithing skill is required.

Weight: 5

He only explored the possibilities of using the silver thread as a secondary weapon. Until now, Grid had focused on using the silver thread as a secondary weapon. But reality was cruel.

‘It’s hard for me to use the silver thread in practice.’

It was too difficult to utilize the silver thread, even with Grid’s high dexterity. There was no time to control the silver thread while using the sword and magic. In particular, the silver thread wouldn’t work against strong opponents such as Agnus. It wasn’t reasonable to be obsessed with using the silver thread as a secondary weapon.

‘Let’s use it as an item making material.’

In the first place, the silver thread was a ‘material that all blacksmiths of the East Continent dreamt about having.’ Grid had forgotten about this fact while obsessing with the silver thread as a secondary weapon. Grid was able to think more rationally than before since dealing with Agnus.

‘Putting the thread between blades... If I use this as an item making material, it would be a highly useable secondary weapon.’

The usage that Grid thought about?

"Being drawn together!"

"Nyang?"

Noe was surprised by Grid's sudden and loud shout. Grid stroked the head of the little guy whose eyes had become rounded.

"I can connect the parts of Sword Ghost with the silver thread. With one click of the button, the silver thread will be pulled and the blades will fly, automatically attaching to the Sword Ghost!"

"...Nyang?"

Noe couldn't understand what was happening. Noe made a confused expression, but the excited Grid didn't care.

"It is easy to imagine it as Spiderman shooting a thread from the wrist. I will make an item."

One of Grid's few advantages was that he wasn't indecisive. Once decided, he acted quickly.

"Legendary Blacksmith's Creation!"

[Legendary Blacksmith's Creation]

You can create three equipment item production methods every time the skill level of the 'Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship Skill' goes up.

Number of items that can be created at present: 10/24.]

\* When items are produced using this skill, the name of the creator is automatically placed on the item.

[What item do you want to create?]

“Secondary weapon. With a single click of the button, the tool will pull or loosen the silver thread.”

[...Analyzing your intentions. I understand. I will inform you after understanding the item information of the silver thread.]

“...”

It was a pattern that had never been seen before. Grid was a little nervous but waited quietly. But the system was silent. He waited one minute, two minutes then five minutes. However, nothing was said.

‘It isn’t possible?’

He wanted to explain the exact item but maybe he had explained too much.

‘I need to be more specific...’

The moment Grid was about to explain again.

[The analysis of the silver thread is over. I have grasped the intentions of the item you want to create. Are you sure you want to create it?]

“...!”

Indeed, the supercomputer! Grid marvelled at the comprehension of Satisfy and nodded.

“Yes!”

[What materials would you like to use?]

“I will attach it to the handle of the Sword Ghost, so it should be the same material.”

Grid confirmed there was a small amount of drake’s fang remaining and decided to use it as the material. A blank blueprint appeared in front of him.

[Please design the item.]

‘The outline...’

The Legendary Blacksmith's Creation was convenient to use. Even if the user had no knowledge of the item he wanted to create, it would be completed with the help of the system. Grid trusted in this and filled in the blank blueprint. He designed a small square box that wouldn't be disturbed when attached to the handle of the Sword Ghost and designed a spinning fan. It was intended to loosen or pull the silver thread according to the direction of the fan.

'It will be done by clicking the button outside the box.'

Slowly, slowly. He wasn't a professional but he did it carefully. Grid spend two hours constantly revising and designing the box. However, the completed design was too poor. It was a small box five centimetres in diameter that was made of drake fangs. There were two buttons on the outside and a fan that rotated clockwise or anticlockwise depending on which button was clicked. The fan would pull or loosen the silver thread according to the rotation.

Grid's idea was very simple.

"I will put several of these boxes on the handle of the Sword Ghost. At the end of the silver thread, I will hang new types of blades that will be produced. Then I will automatically attach and detach the desired blade with one click of a button."

[...]

The design was over. Yet there was no response from the system. It seemed difficult to interpret Grid's design.

"...A failure."

Perhaps he tried too much.

'I should go to the Internet and think of the scientific structure.'

The moment that Grid sighed and was going to log out.

[Have you decided? When you complete the blueprint, the number of available creation skill will decrease by one.]

"Oh...!"

The Legendary Blacksmith's Creation skill was better than Grid expected. This was the power of the supercomputer called Morpheus.

"I have decided!"

The moment Grid spoke.

*Suksak suksak.*

Numbers and languages quickly covered Grid's blueprint. All types of figures were being calculated in real time. The system was doing its best to supplement the contents of the design created by Grid. After a few minutes.

[Please describe the characteristics of the item.]

The rebuilding of the blueprint was over! The appearance of the box in the design was the same as Grid's original design, but the internal structure was based on a level that the system could understand.

'The energy source of the fan is mana.'

Mana was consumed every time he used it. But Grid accepted this, since he was just thankful that the item was created successfully. He smiled and explained.

"It's a secondary tool that can detach a blade with one click of a button. The blade connected to the silver thread will usually stay in the inventory and will appear when the button is pressed! Then it will pop out! And it will be mounted on the handle. Huhut."

A highly practical item! Grid explained the concept of the newly created secondary tool with enthusiasm. But then the system struck.

[It is impossible to reproduce this due to Satisfy's settings. The silver thread on the outside of the inventory can't be linked to blades stored separately in the inventory. They should be in the same place since they are connected items.]

"...?"

[It is recommended that you make a separate storage space to store the blades connected with the silver thread.]

“ ”  
...

(He held a handle in calloused hands and 10 large blades around his body.)

It was an image of the Overgeared King that would later be on everyone's lips.

# Chapter 668

Over four hours. It was the time Grid spent by the roadside creating a new item. He was only focused on one thing.

“...Finished.”

A confident look! Grid completed the process of creating an item and asserted.

“It’s the best!”

[Pulling Tool]

\* Secondary tool.

A small box with a diameter of five centimeters, created by the blacksmith Grid who is eager to learn the divine techniques.

When the button on top of the box is clicked, the internal fan will rotate counterclockwise and release the silver thread. When the button on the bottom is clicked, the internal fan rotates clockwise and pulls the silver thread. It takes 0.3 seconds every time.

The end of the silver thread can be attached to a ‘blade’ item.

Conditions of Use: Depends on where the box is installed.

\* The box can be installed anywhere.

Fan Operation (Button Click) Resource Consumption: 630 mana.

“Kuk...”

0.3 seconds!

The time it took to detach and attach a blade was dramatically reduced!

"I will experiment right now!"

The giddy Grid headed towards the smithy.

◇ ◇ ◇

*Ttang! Ttang!*

"Stupid bastard! There's no rhythm in your hammering! How many times do I need to tell you to listen to the melody of the metal!?"

"The fire isn't good at all. You can smelt more metal by properly controlling the intensity of the flames, just like a woman's body."

The large smithy located in the center of Reinhardt. Advanced blacksmiths from all over the kingdom and the blacksmiths of Pangea were training thousands of blacksmiths. The effect of the teaching was unrivalled as the techniques of the East Continent and West Continent combined in a positive direction.

[Baron's Beginner Blacksmith's skill has risen!]

[Spinner's Intermediate Blacksmith skill has matured!]

[Medon's Intermediate Blacksmith skill has achieved dramatic maturity!]

"Well well. Okay, very good!"

The only craftsman blacksmith in the Overgeared Kingdom, Khan. He was in charge of the blacksmiths management and education and smiled warmly. He was very happy to see the blacksmiths teaching, learning, competing, and growing every day. He hoped they could develop and contribute to King Grid.



"His Majesty would've accomplished a great feat somewhere..."

Grid had left Reinhardt immediately after kidnapping tens of thousands of residents of Pangea. What was he doing now? It was obvious. He would be sure to impress people with good deeds or would've made a great piece of equipment with the best techniques on the continent. This was what Khan believed.

*Snap!*

The front door of the smith, which a able-bodied man had to push with all his strength, opened lightly like a reed swaying in the wind. It was followed by the appearance of a person.

"Out of the way!"

It was Grid. Something was so urgent that Grid forgot he was a king and stood before the nearest furnace. He immediately pulled out a hammer.

"The Overgeared King...!"

The attention of the blacksmiths focused on Grid. The legendary blacksmith, Pagma's Descendant. It was a great learning opportunity for the blacksmiths to observe him making an item. The blacksmiths couldn't hide their excitement as they gathered by Grid's side. Of course, Khan was the same.

"These resolute eyes...!"

Khan gulped. He was already excited to see what type of item Grid would make. Grid pulled out the drake fangs and silver thread.

"Ohhhh!"

The materials that were as rare as pulling a star from the sky were brought out at the same time! The expectations of the blacksmiths soared into the sky.

'Is he trying to make a legendary sword?'

'It's likely to be an armor if he took out the silver thread. The silver thread will increase the aesthetic beauty of the armor and will also increase its defense.'

What would the only legendary blacksmith in the world make with such unusual items? Everyone forgot what they were doing as they focused only on Grid. Grid started making the item without realizing the eyes of those around him.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

“...Huh?”

*Hwaruk! Hwaruruk!*

“...?”

*Ttang! Ttang!*

“...”

Doubt appeared on the blacksmiths' faces as Grid's work progressed. Grid used the precious drake fangs to create an empty box and an unidentified round disc. Unlike everyone's expectations, it was neither a weapon nor armor. The purpose was unknown.

‘What?’

The box and disc produced by Grid were very small. The box was only five centimeters in diameter and the disc was less than three centimeters. It was the size of a kid's toy. The blacksmiths couldn't believe it.

'The precious drake fang was turned into this... '

Maybe the Overgeared King didn't know about the importance of resources! Some people started asking questions like this while Grid continued working. He took a strange of silver thread, wound it on the small disc and mounted it in the box. The advanced blacksmiths all felt admiration. Grid's dexterity was so delicate that they could never reach it in their lives.

On the other hand, the intermediate and below blacksmiths didn't feel any inspiration. Grid finished it so quickly that they mistook it as an easy task.

"Okay, it's finished."

Grid smiled with satisfaction, took out the +7 Sword Ghost and separated it into two. Then the Pulling Device box was attached to the handle. It was welded together using the blast furnace.

“Kukuk... Kukukuk!”

What was so good? Grid was laughing alone with a very pleased expression. The blacksmiths cocked their heads to one side.

*Click!*

Grid pressed a button on the attached box. Then.

*Hwiririk!*

The silver thread stretched out from the box.

*Tadak.*

Grid pressed a button again. Then this time.

*Hwiririk!*

The extended silver thread returned to the box.

“Huh...?”

A spectacular sight!

The blacksmiths started to show greater interest in the tool that Grid produced. But the precise use of it hadn't yet been determined.

'It's amazing, but what's the significance of shooting out a strand of silver thread...?'

'The silver thread can be shot out, but it's too weak to be used as a weapon...'

'It isn't a weapon, but an assisting tool. Does he intend to launch the silver thread at trees and pillars, or to bind the enemy's body?'

'The length of the silver thread is too short for that. It is less than one meter.'

‘Hrmm...’

Most production class players chose the Saharan Empire as their home country. It was because the empire’s rich economy benefited the production classes. Due to that, the Overgeared Kingdom’s blacksmiths were 100% NPCs. The NPCs who only knew the world of Satisfy couldn’t grasp the intentions of the modern day Grid. Grid pulled out Belial’s Horn.

[Belial’s Horn]

A weapon material that contains Belial’s magic power.

Various options are added when making weapons.

However, finding a blacksmith who can handle this horn is as difficult as picking a star from the sky.

It was a weapon production material that a great demon dropped. It could be considered a production material with more value than adamantium. Grid had already dealt with Belial’s Horn in the process of making items for his kingdom’s meritorious retainers. It was also several times!

‘There will be at least eight options if I make a weapon with Belial’s Horn.’

Additional physical damage, additional magic damage, additional fire damage, additional dark damage, there was a certain probability of releasing fire when attacking, additional damage to divine existences and the ability to cause hallucinations.

Grid had learned this while making weapons for his retainers. When making a weapon with Belial’s Horn, at least two to four of the eight options were assigned to the weapon.

‘I want to add physical damage, fire damage, and damage to divine existences.’

These were the options that belonged to Piaro’s hand plow. The power was

overwhelming. The weapon that Grid would make with Belial's Horn was a 'blade.'

Grid hoped that there wouldn't be the additional magic damage option as he threw Belial's Horn into the furnace.

*Kurururung!*

"Heok...!"

The blacksmiths held their breaths. There was turbulence as soon as Belial's Horn entered the fire.

"T-The curse of a great demon?"

Khan reassured the anxious blacksmiths.

"Don't make a big fuss. It isn't a curse. This is a shock caused by the special magic power contained in the demon's horn."

This was the reason why blacksmiths found it hard to handle Belial's Horn. Belial's Horn had a very violent temper. In particular, the process of resistance was extremely severe.

*Ttang!*

*Peeeeeeong!*

*Ttang!*

*Kwa kwa kwang!*

The red Belial's Horn was placed on the anvil. An explosion of flames and darkness swallowed Grid every time he hammered it. Grid kept suffering damage.

[You have suffered 4,400 damage.]

[You have suffered 4,530 damage.]

[The effect of Doran's Ring has been activated.]

[2,265 health has been restored.]

[You have suffered 4,370 damage.]

[The experience of Tiramet's Belt has increased by 0.01%!]

'It would've been unfair if the item experience didn't rise.'

If Grid's stats and items weren't as high, he might've lost his life in the process of refining Belial's Horn.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

*Kwarururung!*

He hammered it hundreds of times! Grid was swallowed up by flames and darkness every time he hammered it, but he didn't die. He was able to cope with the anticipated damage using potions, the healing effect of Tiramet's Belt, and the defensive effect of the First King title.

"...Gulp."

Risking their lives with blacksmith work? The blacksmiths watched Grid work with fear and horror. Everyone shut their mouths and focused on Grid's work.

[Your potion cooldown time hasn't returned.]

"Sigh."

The resistance of Belial's Horn was terrible. Grid was injured and had to rest a few times along the way. It wasn't something that could be done with ordinary persistence.

"G... Ghoul..."

"..."

Night was over and the bright morning arrived. The blacksmiths had forgotten about eating while watching Grid work and unknowingly fell asleep.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

*Hwaruruk!*

Belial's Horn was still resisting. But its momentum had waned. Grid felt that the end was coming. Once the sun was high in the sky.

[You are extremely concentrated and the Legendary Blacksmith's Patience skill has been activated.]

[Vitality, defense, and dexterity will rise by 200% for one hour.]

The patience effect, which had a much lower rate of activating than the Legendary Blacksmith's Breath, was triggered and made Grid's work easier.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid kept up the hammering and Belial's Horn started to gradually change shape. It was forming the shape of a blade as Grid intended. Then something amazing happened.

[After the last tempering, Belial's Horn is strengthened.]

[Enhanced Belial's Horn]

Belial's Horn enhanced by the legendary blacksmith Grid.

The Enhanced Belial's Horn is a better weapons building material than the existing Belial's Horn.

However, the degree of difficulty in handling it has also increased. A lot of time and effort must be spend to forge it into the form that you want.

"Eh...?"

A similar phenomenon to when the Red Phoenix's Breath became the Enhanced Phoenix Breath occurred!



# Chapter 669

‘Enhanced... Just like the byproduct of the divine creatures, the byproduct of a great demon is also a myth rated material.’

It was natural when thinking about the existence of a great demon. It was right that Belial’s Horn would be a material superior to ordinary materials.

“Good...”

Grid’s expectations were amplified. Considering that the weapons made with Belial’s Horn exerted the greatest power, the blade made with the Enhanced Belial’s Horn would far surpass it.

‘There might be 2~4 options attached, possibly more...!’

*Duguen! Duguen!*

Grid’s heart thumped wildly with joy.

‘Calm down.’

Grid was aware from numerous experiences how important composure was. He was afraid that he would be in a hurry when working and become disappointed. Therefore, Grid took deep breaths and controlled his mind. He try to soothe his excited heart.

“ ... ”

Despite feeling expectant of the result produced by the Enhanced Belial’s Horn, his excited mind became calm.

“ ... ”

He couldn’t hear the voices of the blacksmiths gathered around him.

“ ... ”

He looked back on his techniques. He looked back on his mistakes. He looked back on his goals. Time flowed.

“...!”

The blacksmiths watching Grid held their breaths. Belial’s Horn that had been emitting fire and demonic energy. Grid stared at it and his eyes deepened like an abyss.

‘A bright and clean mind...!’

Khan and the blacksmiths got goosebumps.

*Ttaaaaaang!*

The sound of Grid hitting Belial’s Horn made a clear sound that resonated through the huge smithy.

‘Ah...!’

White from the White Hammer Smithy, Enoch from the Blue Flames Smithy, Byuksan of the Black Anvil Smithy, and Lahochu of the Red Tongs Smithy. They were praised as the four great blacksmiths of Pangea. Now they were inspired by Grid’s techniques!

[White has reached new enlightenment as a blacksmith of the Overgeared Kingdom! He has been blocked by the wall of the Advanced Blacksmith’s technique and now has room to grow into a craftsman!]

[Enoch has reached new enlightenment as a blacksmith of the Overgeared Kingdom! He has been blocked by the wall of the Advanced Blacksmith’s technique and now has room to grow into a craftsman...]

[Byuksan has reached new enlightenment as a blacksmith of the Overgeared Kingdom! He has been blocked by the wall of the Advanced Blacksmith’s technique...]

[Lahochu has reached new enlightenment as a blacksmith of the Overgeared Kingdom! He has been blocked by the wall...]

“Oh... Ohhhhhh!”

Khan’s elderly body shook. The bright future of a blacksmith kingdom, the Overgeared Kingdom, was unfolding beautifully in his head. He was eager. He wanted to survive longer and see Grid’s works. He wanted to do more for the bright future of the Overgeared Kingdom. This desire was passed on to Grid.

‘Khan.’

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid reached his peak while tempering Belial’s Horn. He felt the burning aspiration of someone who was sometimes a friend, sometimes a teacher, and sometimes a father. Thus, he poured even more strength and skill into his hammering.

‘Don’t think about dying until you learn from all my skills.’

His first friend, Grid wanted to be with Khan forever. This wish raised Grid’s concentration to a higher level. A stage of self-transcendence. Now Grid forgot even himself. He couldn’t distinguish himself from the hammer and as a result, Belial’s Horn became further tempered.

[You are extremely concentrated and the Legendary Blacksmith’s Breath skill has been activated.]

[You are extremely concentrated and the Legendary Blacksmith’s Patience skill has been activated.]

[You are extremely concentrated and the Legendary Blacksmith’s Breath skill has been activated.]

[You are extremely concentrated and the Legendary Blacksmith’s Patience skill has been activated.]

[You are extremely con...]

...

...

*Ttaaang!*

Every time he hit it with the hammer, Belial's Horn would flash red and black. The material to make the strongest weapon in existence gradually took the shape of a blade.

"...It's finally over."

After a long time, the result came out. It was beyond Grid's expectations.

[Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires]

Rating: Myth

Durability: 1,660/1,660 Attack Power: 3,500

- \* 20% increase in physical attack power.
- \* 20% increase in magic attack power.
- \* 30% bonus fire attribute damage.
- \* 30% bonus dark attribute damage.
- \* Deals an additional 50% damage to sacred beings.
- \* There is a certain probability of flames (large) being released when attacking.
- \* There is a low probability of illusions being released when attacking.
- ★ There is a certain probability of a black flames explosion when attacking.
- \* The skill 'Enlightenment' is created.
- \* The skill 'Ecstasy of Desire' is created.

It is a blade that will become a myth beyond a legend. The owner of this blade will leave countless achievements and will be the protagonists of hymns that future generations will sing.

Of course, this is a story for when the blade is attached to a handle. It isn't possible to use the blade with no handle.

The blacksmith Grid has surpassed the skills of a god and has shared his enlightenment and aspirations with others.

The blinking flames on this silvery blade show an artistry that is rare even in dragon lairs.

The hidden function of 'black flames' has been implemented because the features of Belial's Horn have been drawn out to the extremes.

The explosion of black flames will ignore all fire resistance and dark resistance of the target and will ruin the area.

Conditions of Use: Under the premise that a handle is attached, the three highest ranked use of each class in which a sword can be equipped.

Weight: 1,999

[Enlightenment Lv. 1]

A persistent passive.

Increases character experience and skill experience acquisition by 10%, and accuracy and evasion by 20%.

\* Skills attached to myth rated items can be upgraded.

[Ecstasy of Desire Lv. 1]

A conditionally triggered passive.

When fighting an enemy with a higher level than yourself, there is a very low probability of entering a 'selfless' state if your health drops below a certain point.

Your attack power will increase by three times and your evasion by 99% for 20 seconds.

However, defense will fall to 0.

\* Skills attached to myth rated items can be upgraded.

"Uh... Um..."

Of the options that were possible when making a weapon out of Belial's Horn, Grid had uncovered eight. But now he saw nine things in total. And all nine of them were attached to his weapon.

"...This is really amazing."

The flames (large) that had a certain chance of being emitted was a secondary effect that applied 5,000 fixed damage. Of course, damage wasn't fully applied to targets with fire resistance, but this wasn't a disadvantage. Grid always wanted the fire release option. Yet there were eight options as well as the fire release one. No, nine options were allocated.

Grid had especially high anticipation for the hidden attribute of black flames.

'A unique property that ignores fire and dark resistance...'

The explosion was also likely to be a splash attack. Maybe it would be similar to the 5,000 damage of the flames (large). No, it would show great destructive power even if it dealt only half of that damage.

'Next.'

It might not be comparable to Kraugel's Super Sensitivity, but the Enlightenment effect would be very helpful in battle. Starting with the durability and attack power, all the options were perfect. There was only one problem.

‘Ecstasy of Desire...’

It was a skill that reminded of the legendary weapon Sword of Self-transcendence produced during his beginner days. Strictly speaking, it could be called a higher state than self-transcendence. Perfect State of Self-Transcendence was a skill that caused the user to lose their ego in exchange for doubling all stats. They would also be defenseless for two seconds after the duration ended.

‘Certainly... It is a hundred times better than the Perfect State of Self-Transcendence skill. It’s much more powerful to have my attack power triple than my stats doubling.’

Furthermore, his evasion increased to 99%. It meant he could avoid 99 out of 100 attacks. It was almost a cheat key. But as mentioned before, there was a problem. It was also a deadly one.

‘Defense will become zero...’

Didn’t it mean a 1% chance of being hit? Grid had a 99% evasion rate, so from an ordinary person’s point of view, having zero defense wasn’t something to worry about. But who was Grid? He was an unlucky person. The probability of 1% was too annoying.

‘Ah, damn... I feel like this is a troll skill...’

No, he shouldn’t jump to conclusions. Grid shook his head and pulled out the Sword Ghost with the Pulling Device attached to it. Then he tied the Enlightenment Blade to the other end of the silver thread.

“...”

The blacksmiths were still unable to grasp the identity of the pulling device and showed great interest. They were excited to finally find out the use of the box. Then...

*Ttalkak.*

Grid pressed a button. Then.

*Chwarururuk!*

*Clink!*

The Enlightenment Blade flew and was automatically fitted to the Sword Ghost. Grid's intention was revealed. There was a reason why Grid tried the Sword Ghost as a handle. The reason...

[Sword Ghost (Small Piece) and the Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires have been combined. The item information will be updated.]

[Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires]

Rating: Myth

...

...

\* For every attack that hits the same target, 10% attack power will accumulate (up to 100%).

A sword that will become a myth beyond a legend.

The owner of this sword will leave countless achievements and will be the protagonists of hymns that future generations will sing.

...

...

...

The Sword Ghost was a sword designed to exert the best power in combat. Compared to other weapons, it was very comfortable to handle and had the option of exerting extreme attack power. It was easy to use and strong. Grid was obsessed with the Sword Ghost because he wanted to add the strength of the Sword Ghost to his new blade. This was the result.

*Clack!*

*Chwaruruk!*



*Clink!*

Once he clicked the button again, the blade separated from the handle. It flew through the air, was grabbed by a God Hand and inserted into Grid's waist belt. This item swap was at the speed of light.

"...Huh."

The blacksmiths couldn't close their mouths after grasping Grid's intent.

[You have failed to enhance the +0 Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires.]

[You have failed to enhance the +0 Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires.]

[You have failed to enhance the +0 Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong...]

"..."

Grid shed tears. He tasted the pain of his heart breaking despite hearing from Jishuka that myth rated weapons were difficult to enhance.

"XX."

Grid forgot his dignity and cursed before leaving the smithy. He intended to relieve his stress and test the power of the weapon by hitting the scarecrows in the training ground.

After a moment.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

"Pounding Mortar?"

Reinhardt shook. It was like the shock that occurred when Piaro and Kraugel

competed in Reidan.

# Chapter 670

“The Overgeared King!”

The training grounds. Asmophel was training the soldiers when he found Grid and ran over. He was interested in the blade hanging from Grid’s waist.

“Isn’t that a peculiar shaped weapon?”

It was a blade without a handle. He wondered if it could even be called a weapon?

“Is the production process unfinished? Ah!”

Asmophel’s eyes widened in the middle of his question. It was because the blade hanging at Grid’s waist suddenly heated up like lava and threw out flames. It blossomed like a flower and disappeared, looking beautiful and mysterious. Grid smiled warmly.

“Isn’t it cool? Asmophel, this is a blade made of Belial’s Horn, just like your weapon. This is the also the finished product.”

A long explanation wasn’t necessary.

*Tadak!*

Grid pulled out the Sword Ghost and pressed a button on the Pulling Device.

*Hwiririk!*

*Clink!*

The blade was drawn by the silver thread towards the Sword Ghost and became attached.

“Huh... That’s why there is a deep groove in the blade.”

“Yes, it can attach to the blade of the small piece like a sheath.”

“Great. You can use it during battle and deal an unexpected blow to the enemy.”

“Um, well... I can use it for that purpose.”

Grid crossed the training ground while talking to Asmophel. His dignity grabbed the attention of the soldiers. Thousands of soldiers forgot about training as they watched Grid. There were also players present.

There was Soldier, who was active on Cork Island with Peak Sword, as well as players who had the ‘soldier’ class. Why did they enlist in the Overgeared Kingdom’s army instead of the Saharan Empire? It wasn’t because of Grid or the expectations that the future of the Overgeared Kingdom would be brighter than the empire. They only wanted the mass produced Grid set.

That’s right. They aimed to carry out quests they could receive from the Overgeared army and built up items based on it. It was an incomplete force that had the ability to leave the Overgeared Kingdom at any time after achieving their goals.

‘If it wasn’t for the mass produced Grid set...’

‘I would’ve enlisted with the empire or Ares.’

‘From the standpoint of a soldier, the empire and Ares are much more advantageous than Grid.’

They would gain the mass produced Grid set and then leave. In order to obtain the set, they had to contribute to the development of the Overgeared Kingdom.

“Huh? What’s he trying to do?”

The players looked at the Overgeared Kingdom as a stage to ‘step through.’ Unlike the NPC soldiers, they looked at Grid without any inspiration. Grid was standing in front of a scarecrow on one side of the training ground.

Someone laughed. “Is he going to show off his sword dance in front of the soldiers in order to increase the morale of the army?”

“Pfft...”

Grid’s strength was known by all. It was the same with the player soldiers. But the

player soldiers remembered the battle in the Belto Kingdom not long ago. Grid was defeated by Kraugel in the National Competition and pushed back by Agnus in the Belto Kingdom, so they recognized him as the 'number two.' They thought it was funny that Grid was posturing in front of his soldiers.

'Well, the NPC soldiers are frogs in a well who don't know the identities of Kraugel and Agnus. They will praise him if Grid shows off his sword dance.'

'Grid will enjoy the soldiers making a big fuss over him.'

The player soldiers weren't disregarding Grid right now. They were jealous of Grid who was beyond them. However, these people didn't want to admit that they were jealous of Grid. They tried to find a small flaw in Grid in order to criticize him.

"Um."

On the other hand, Grid didn't even see the player soldiers. He knew exactly why they joined the Overgeared Kingdom's army. He thought they were just passing by and treated then as a folding screen. In addition, the reason why Grid came to the training ground was to test the power of his weapon, not for the soldiers.

"I will start the test."

*Hwaruruk!*

Sparks flew from the sword in Grid's hand. He struck a training scarecrow that had a fixed defense and resistance of 0. However, the power and effect was beyond the category of a basic attack.

*Peeeeeeong!*

".....!!"

After making the myth rated item, all stats had risen by 10 and Grid's total strength was 3,120. At the third awakening, the strength stat gave an extra 0.4 attack power per one point. Thus, 3,120 strength guaranteed 1,248 damage. There was the 20% increased physical attack power, 30% additional fire damage and the 30% additional dark damage. Once the sum of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires was added together, his attack power was 6,300. It was a total of 7,548 attack power for those who had no fire resistance and dark resistance, plus the effects of Pagma's

Swordsmanship Lv. 4 and Weapons Mastery Lv. 5. The deactivated Pagma's Swordsmanship Lv. 4 increased attack power by 34% and Intermediate Weapons Mastery Lv. 5 increased attack power by 17%.

[You have dealt 11,397 damage to the target.]

Grid's basic attack dealt more than 10,000 damage to the scarecrow.

*Kung!*

“...!!!”

The scarecrow fell down, proof that it suffered more than 10,000 damage, before jumping up again. The soldiers' mouths dropped open as Grid attacked the scarecrow a second, third and fourth time.

*Jjang! Jjejeong! Jjejejeok!*

[You have dealt 12,537 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt 13,791 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt 15,170 damage to the target.]

The effect of Sword Ghost increased attack power once it attacked the same target. Thus, the scarecrow started to suffer more damage.

“...Eh?”

The players doubted their eyes. Grid didn't seem to be using a skill. This made it hard to understand why the scarecrow fell every time it was hit.

‘Surely he isn’t doing more than 10,000 damage with a basic attack?’

‘This is impossible...’

The soldiers kept refusing to believe it.

*Jeeong!*

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title ‘Death in One Shot!’ has been activated, adding 30% critical damage!]

A critical was applied to Grid’s basic attack. The important point here was that like the Death in One Shot! title, Pagma’s Swordsmanship also increased critical damage. Pagma’s Swordsmanship Lv. 4 increased critical damage by 20%. While a player’s base critical damage was 200%, Grid’s critical damage was more than 250%. It was a number that would shame assassins.

[You have dealt 41,718 damage to the target!]

*Kwajak!*

“...This isn’t a basic attack?”

The scarecrows had the option of ‘stabilizing when under 50,000 damage.’ The players started turning pale. Grid hit the scarecrow again.

[The +8 Holy Light Gloves’s option effect is activated, causing the skill ‘5 Joint Attacks’ to be generated!]

[You have dealt 91,780 damage to the target!]

Every time he hit the same target, the option of Sword Ghost increased the default damage. At the same time, 5 Joint Attacks was activated, turning the scarecrow into ashes.

*Kuwaaang!*

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has added 5,000 fire damage!]

The fire option was activated, causing the flames to burn the ash scattering in the air without any traces left behind.

“...He is continuously using a skill. Right?”

“Of course it’s a skill. How can he smash a scarecrow with basic attacks?”

The player soldiers never imagined that Grid was hitting the scarecrow with basic attacks. The misunderstanding that Grid could use ‘skills without any delay’ arose and they felt admiration. At that moment.

[You have dealt 11,397 damage to the target...]

[You have dealt 12,537...]

[You have dealt 13,791...]

...

...



...

[You have dealt 22,794 damage to the target!]

A notification window popped up in Grid's vision once he hit the new scarecrow 10 consecutive times and instantly raised his power by 100%.

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

One side of the training grounds. A total of 5,000 scarecrows used for the soldiers' training were destroyed. In the center of the burning scarecrows, Grid held a sword that was emitting black flames!

[Splash damage equal to 300% of your attack power will hit every target within 10 meters.]

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title 'Death in One Shot!' has been...]

[The +8 Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be...]

[You have dealt 854,775 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 854,775 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 854,775 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 854,775...]

...

...

...

*Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

An explosion that occurred 360 degrees around Grid. Hundreds of scarecrows were erased from the world without a trace.

“...”

“...It seems that Lael will be angry.”

The overwhelming destructive power that swept away the training ground. Asmophel wiped off the sweat that occurred due to the explosion and muttered. The soldiers and players were unable to bear the destructive power and fell down. Now they were struck dumb.

“...Awesome.”

Grid shed tears of joy. He didn't even use the buff skills such as Blackening or Blacksmith's Rage, yet he destroyed an area of 10 meters.

On this day.

Title: To those who say that the Overgeared King is no better than Agnus.

Contents: Hello. I am Soldier J of the Overgeared Kingdom's army. Today, I want to tell you the truth. You might not imagine it, but Lord Grid was going easy when he faced Agnus. In fact, King Grid has a burning sword... This sword can burn Agnus, the death knights, liches, and everything else... But King Grid didn't use it because it's too much  
——;;;

For reference, I will be in the Overgeared Kingdom's army forever.

A ridiculous rumor started to spread around the Satisfy communities. Absolutely zero credence was placed in the contents. People thought that the Overgeared Kingdom was manipulating public opinion to protect Grid's reputation. Well, the truth would be revealed someday.

Later.

"Salute!"

"Hooray King Grid!"

"...?"

The eyes of the player soldiers were as motivated as the NPC soldiers. The enthusiastic Overgeared army was quickly becoming stronger.

# Chapter 671

“...58 gold each.”

The ‘training scarecrows’ that could be purchased and installed from the ‘Facilities’ menu was quite expensive as it was a military equipment that could be used semi-permanently. But according to the report, 219 scarecrows disappeared without a trace. Why? They were smashed by none other than Grid.

‘Why did he destroy the sinless and expensive scarecrows?... Wait, didn’t Grid say he would make a sword out of Belial’s Horn?’

*Shake shake.*

Lauel shook as he started worrying about Grid.

‘Surely he didn’t fail to make an item?’

How stressed would Grid have to be to destroy national facilities?

‘He would be upset if the weapon made of Belial’s Horn has an unsatisfying finish.’

It was right after Grid met the powerhouse called Agnus. He would already be on edge so how much pain would Grid have suffered failing to produce a weapon?

‘This... I have to comfort him.’

As a friend and colleague, Lauel was worried about Grid and rose from his seat. He ignored the stacks of paper piled up like a mountain and tried to send a whisper to Grid.

"Hi, hisashiburi." (Long time no see in Japanese)

At that moment, the door opened without permission and Pope Damian entered. He had the beaming expression that was his ‘I’m dating Isabel’ face.

"Why has Your Holiness come to see me? Aren’t you busy preparing for the Vatican’s

festival?"

Lauel liked Damian a lot. It was because there was good communication between them.

"Yare yare... Is Lauel, the brain of Overgeared, busy? I came to see if the Rebecca temples are operating well."

As the pope, Damian built a total of three Rebecca temples in Reinhardt. There were 50 priests and 100 paladins in each one. But as the saying went, priests were precious. Since it was virtually impossible to deploy a large number of NPC priests, Damian gave quests to the player priests and led them to stay in the Overgeared Kingdom. As a result, a large number of priests were stationed in each temple. But were they working for the kingdom properly? Damian was honestly sorry.

"Not long ago, I saw that Grid was lacking priests when fighting Immortal. Did the Saharan Empire tempt away all the priests?"

Lauel smiled at the worried Damian.

"No. The priests are still staying in the Overgeared Kingdom. The reason Grid didn't bring priests with him was because he felt he had a lot of room. He hadn't expected Agnus' emergence."

"Is that so? I was worried about the recent rumor that the empire is trying to access our priests in the Overgeared Kingdom. Fortunately, it was just a rumor."

"..."

It wasn't nonsense. The Saharan Empire was trying to intimidate the Overgeared Kingdom and were jockeying to take the Rebecca priests.

'Thanks to this, Faker is really busy.'

The shadow behind the Overgeared Kingdom. Faker was always watching the Rebecca priests. He blocked the empire's spies before they could contact the priests. Lauel felt sorry for Faker, who didn't have time to do his individual work. But Faker had good news recently.

"My level is going up quickly while hunting the enemy spies. It's better than monster

hunting.”

It wasn't false. Faker's level was rising faster than the Overgeared members at the hunting grounds. The Saharan Empire was helping Faker.

'Furthermore, Kasim seems interested in Faker.'

Kasim was King of the Shadows and a disciple of Lantier. He was a named NPc on the same rank as Piaro and Asmophel. It was extremely good news that he was interested in Faker. Maybe Faker would receive a hidden quest and learn Lantier's skills.

'...Faker might become strong enough to compete with Grid.'

Faker rarely made public appearances, unlike the other Overgeared members. The number of times he participated in various events and battles was smaller than the other Overgeared members. It wasn't because Faker was weak, but because he acted secretly. Faker had as much talent as Jishuka, as much passion as Regas, and as much reasoning ability as Pon. His potential for development was unlimited.

'Due to the nature of his class, there's little time for personal activities.'

If he grew while hunting enemy spies and received Lantier's teachings...

“...Sir? Lauel?”

“Ah, I'm sorry.”

Lauel was locked in thought and became startled at Damian's voice. Damian felt sorry for Lauel.

“Aren't you doing most work alone these days? Then your hair loss will become worse. Shouldn't you obtain more manpower?”

"Haha, it's okay. Since then, I have greatly increased the number of people involved in administrative affairs. I was thinking about something else.”

As with any other country, the Overgeared Kingdom was zealous in seeking manpower. They often held trials to recruit NPcs and players talented in each field. Furthermore, the growth rate of the NPcs taught by Sage Sticks was so high that the workforce of the Overgeared Kingdom was rapidly increasing. Lauel's workload had

declined from what it was a few months ago. However, he still had a murderous schedule.

"Then I'm glad... By the way, where were you planning to go?"

"Ah, I was going to see Grid. His Majesty seems to be in pain after failing to make an item."

"W-What? Grid failed to make an item?"

Damian had an expression like he lost his country.

"Unbelievable! The legendary blacksmith Grid failed to make an item!"

"..."

Grid was the person who saved Isabel with just his blacksmithing techniques. Damian's experience with Grid's blacksmithing techniques was thousands, tens of thousands of times greater than anyone else. But Grid had failed to make an item. The impact that Damian received was very large. Vantner, who was passing by in the hallway, heard his scream and rushed in.

"What? Grid failed in making an item?!"

Vantner's voice was as loud as a train horn. He was like Orator Huroi as he easily attracted people's attention.

"Is it true that God Grid failed to make an item?"

"Grid made a normal weapon?"

"No, he actually failed in making an item! The materials were destroyed!"

"Crazy...! Has the level of Grid's blacksmithing skill fallen?"

"Will Grid be deprived of his legendary blacksmith status?"

The rumors became exaggerated! Rumors spread that Grid would be deprived of his qualification as a legendary blacksmith and plunged the Overgeared Guild into chaos.

“Is it a penalty from when he was forced to assimilate in the fight against Agnus?”

“Now Grid is a legendary magician instead of a legendary blacksmith?”

“Unbelievable... The Overgeared King isn’t a blacksmith but a magician... Then is he no longer the Overgeared King?”

"Do we have to change his name to the Magic King...?"

"How big is Grid’s heartache...?!!!"

This misunderstood Overgeared members started searching all over Reinhardt. It was to find Grid who was hiding alone somewhere. Damian was with them. Then.

“I found him!”

An Overgeared member was able to find Grid at the training ground. Grid had just destroyed hundreds of scarecrows and was afraid of Laue’s nagging.

"Look at that dead expression!"

"The rumors were true..."

"G-Grid, are you okay?"

“...?”

What was with all the fuss? Grid wondered about the violently worried Overgeared members. Then Damian ran up to Grid.

“Grid! Don’t be saddened by the fact that you failed to make an item!”

“...?”

"There are also times when monkeys fall from trees! No matter how skilled Grid is, you can’t always be good! Isn’t it just today? Even if you failed to make an item, you can make the next item well!"

“...What are you saying?”



Grid didn't understand why people were saying that he failed to make an item. Damian looked at the frowning Grid and hit his chest.

"Hit me!"

"...??"

"Didn't you fight me in the National Competition? I am very sturdy! I won't die! Hit me until your broken heart is soothed! Relieve your stress!"

The tankers of the Overgeared Guild, Toban and Vantner also stepped forward.

"Hit us! Do it heartily!"

"Release the stress that must've accumulated since your fight with Agnus! Now come!"

"...Ohu."

Grid still wanted to experiment with the damage. He wanted to enjoy the power of the sword that broke all the scarecrows so easily. Then the punching bag... No, Grid happily complied with his friends.

"Okay, apply for a duel. Your experience won't drop even if you die."

"What is death?"

"We are tankers."

"No Grid. Did you forget how strong I was at the National Competition? I am several times more durable than I was at that time. Just freely vent. I can endure it."

"You won't regret it?"

Grid smiled and wielded the Enlightenment Sword that was attached to the Sword Ghost. The target was Damian. At that moment.

*Puaaaaaaaaaah!*

Black flames exploded from the sword that collided with Damian...

"T-Time! Stop!"

Damian hurriedly shouted after checking the damage. He suggested.

"I-I will apply for a duel...!"

"What if I don't want to?"

Grid already had a taste. Grid was excited by the 'additional 50% damage to sacred beings' that boasted power beyond imagination.

"Owaaaaack! Yamete! Yamete kudasai!" (Stop! Please stop!)

Damian ran away from Grid, whose eyes were shining brightly like lanterns. He didn't have any confidence despite using his defensive buffs.

"..."

"...Did he make that sword just now?"

Vantner and Toban already shrank back. The day that praise for Grid spread around Satisfy's communities, the Overgeared members admired the power of Grid's weapon. It was the beginning of the full-scaled overgeared myth.

# Chapter 672

“Irene!!”

“King Grid!”

"Hahahaha!"

“Hohohoho!”

“ .. ”

An attack power of one billion, Meteor that could be instantly activated with no conditions, etc. It wasn't a dream item, but Grid succeeded in making the best item. He succeeded in this achievement three years after starting Satisfy. The joy that Grid felt was so big that it was difficult to gauge. It was natural that he would rejoice after reuniting with Irene.

“You’ve become even more beautiful since last I saw you!”

Grid smiled widely as he stroked Irene’s soft hair. Grid’s hand moved and revealed Irene’s pretty little forehead. It was a very lovely forehead so Grid kissed it. He didn’t care about the knights and maids watching. Irene’s milky white skin turned red as she blushed.

“I’m happy. I missed your kind kisses.”

In fact, recently Irene had been very worried. Yura, Jishuka, Euphemina, Laella, etc. Grid always had beauties around him. But recently, the woman called Sua appeared and Irene realized that Grid couldn’t resist his desires and would have several concubines. Grid had the right as the king. But unlike Irene’s concerns, Grid didn’t take any concubines.

Of course, Irene knew. The reason Grid didn’t have concubines wasn’t because he only loved her, but because he was so busy.

'Someday, he will have concubines.'

Irene felt pained. She was sad to think that Grid's warm touch and breath would be shared with other women. But she didn't intend to monopolize Grid. She knew she couldn't monopolize him. A noble should have many children. For the future of the kingdom, Grid needed to have many offspring.

'Furthermore.'

Grid was blessed by the gods. He was a presence who surpassed the flow of time. It had been five years since her marriage to Grid. Irene was in her mid-twenties, while Grid looked the same. Now they looked like the right age, but it would be different after 10 years.

'I don't belong with him.'

The people who matched with Grid were Yura and Jishuka. Irene's eyes became red as she was reminded of the painful reality.

"Irene?"

Grid was surprised when the happily smiling Irene suddenly became tearful. He worried that he had made a mistake. Irene was deeply embarrassed.

"I'm too happy. I'm very glad to spend this time with Your Majesty."

"..."

Grid was a person with no sense of others. He didn't know that Yura and Jishuka harbored a crush on him. But he wasn't a fool. Irene was a woman he shared his life and heart with. Grid got a glimpse of what she was thinking right now.

'Irene... Khan... Lord... '

A finite life was a natural part of life. Satisfy's time flowed differently from reality. Grid became depressed at the thought of some of his precious people disappearing someday. But Grid didn't express it. He wanted Irene to be happy without feeling any sadness. He could be happy thanks to her, so he wanted to repay it with her own happiness.

"Irene!"

“Your Majesty... Hup... um.”

“...Hup.”

The knights and maidens guarding by the side of Grid and Irene blushed and turned their gazes to the wall. Grid’s lips covered Irene’s small lips in a deep kiss. The two people shared a hot kiss, as if they were the only ones who existed in the world.

[Overgeared King Grid and Queen Irene’s love has set an example for the people.]

[The marriage and birth rates in the Overgeared Kingdom have increased by 20%.]

[The population growth rate of the Overgeared Kingdom has increased.]

“Huh? Isn’t this a jackpot?”

Lauel was delighted back in his office.

“...Shit.”

The bald Vantner was in tears. He felt sorrow at being solo since his mother’s womb and Pon laughed at him.



“Amazing...”

Piaro felt admiration when he saw the traces of the battle in the training ground. His shock was greater since he personally trained Damian in the fields.

“Temporary farmer two... No, His Majesty has become strong enough to drive back His Holiness?”

Asmophel nodded at Piaro’s question.

"That's right. He will become stronger than I am in the next two to three years."

“Haha...”

Asmophel was a person who didn't exaggerate. Then his words must be true. Piaro recalled the first time he met Grid. A dull child who couldn't properly handle his own abilities.

"But now he's overwhelming a genius."

This was the power of effort and the flow of time. A dark smile formed on Piaro's wrinkled face. Grid and Kraugel. He was proud and grateful that opening of the era of the new generation was coming closer. He thought that even the Saharan Empire pressuring the Overgeared Kingdom right now, wouldn't last forever.

'There's a problem.'

That person called Baal's Contractor. A sinister figure also appeared at the opening of the new era. He would surely interfere with Grid along the way, making Piaro feel uneasy.

'...My role is to punish him.'

Agnus' presence was so great that Piaro made an earnest vow.



Valhalla. It was a kingdom founded by God of War Ares and the interest in it was very hot. Numerous players hoped to move to Valhalla and join Ares' army. Just like the Overgeared Kingdom had the power of items, Valhalla had the chance to grow in a systematic organization called the army.

Players had a larger choice of kingdoms to choose from and the population of the Saharan Empire decreased accordingly. It wasn't at a catastrophic level, but the empire would receive definite losses in the long run. It was a very unpleasant phenomenon from the perspective of the imperial royal family.

"The Overgeared Kingdom hasn't self-destructed yet?"

The leaders of the Saharan Empire gathered in Titan, the capital. Most of them insisted that the new kingdoms of Overgeared and Valhalla should be punished and

immediately destroyed. But it wasn't easy. The empire had been pursuing a policy of eradicating immigrants for decades and was in constant conflict.

The soldiers and people were tired. The empire of today had no room to invade both Overgeared and Valhalla. That's why they wanted the Overgeared Kingdom to destroy itself. They demanded a high tribute from the Overgeared Kingdom, forcing the kingdom to naturally walk down the path of defeat. However, the Overgeared Kingdom was surprisingly resilient.

"It's really strange. How can they continue to produce battle gear and feed the people when there is no money?"

"Are they cheating us with the taxes and holding back some money?"

"No. We are thoroughly monitoring them and it's impossible."

"Then how do you explain the situation now? The situation can't be explained unless they have infinitely proliferating minerals and food."

"Infinitely proliferating minerals and food... That's a funny joke."

"It's likely that other kingdoms are helping the Overgeared Kingdom. I think it will be good to block all of the Overgeared Kingdom's diplomacy avenues."

"What's the justification? It would be more comfortable to cause a war."

"Valhalla is the problem. Valhalla was only established due to the help of the Overgeared King. The Overgeared Kingdom doesn't have any allies apart from Valhalla. It will be easy if we isolate the Overgeared Kingdom from Valhalla."

"Isn't it simple if we invade both Overgeared and Valhalla at the same time?"

"Where can we spare the army? It's impossible for the empire to make a large-scale military move at this time due to the immigrants."

"As the war continues, the tribes are experiencing a famine. It's impossible to receive aid from their tributaries for war money and they will have to squeeze the blood of their own people, causing an internal problem. They can't cause a war for the next few years."

"The ambassador coming to the great Saharan Empire to discuss poverty... This is due to the persistence of those scum."

"First of all, the immigrants need to be eliminated. Then Overgeared and Valhalla are next."

This confusion was caused by the Overgeared Kingdom still surviving despite being supposed to perish within a few months. Why wasn't the Overgeared Kingdom suffering from a famine? It was difficult for the empire to understand.



"This quarter also has a good harvest. Congratulations, Your Majesty."

"This is all thanks to Piaro."

The agriculture of the Overgeared Kingdom was phenomenal. Spring, summer, autumn, and winter, every season had a good harvest. It was thanks to the legendary farmer Piaro's passive skill. Piaro's existence itself was fraudulent.

"I am lucky that despite having most of my possessions taken away by the empire, neither my people or my soldiers are going hungry."

Rabbit shook his head at the relieved Grid.

"It's only peaceful on the surface. The state of the Overgeared Kingdom is actually very dangerous. There is no money to invest in different fields and development isn't happening. In the end, we will die out."

"In the end, we have to get away from paying a tribute to the empire?"

"Of course."

Rabbit nodded. But he didn't offer any good solutions. Valhalla's presence might've prevented the empire's invasion, but the Overgeared Kingdom couldn't declare their freedom from the empire. There was no room to stop the empire from coming.

"Hmmm..."

The moment Grid was immersed in his thoughts.



*-Overgeared King, what are you doing?*

A whisper came from Valhalla King Ares.

*-What happened?*

They might become enemies one day but right now, Ares was the most dependable ally for Grid. Ares explained after hearing Grid's question.

*-The empire sent an envoy. They told me to offer a tribute to the empire as a token of loyalty.*

*-Indeed, Valhalla as well...*

Grid thought that Ares naturally accepted the demands of the empire. However, Ares was a formidable man like Lael had said.

*-I told him to get lost.*

*-Eh?*

*-How can I pledge allegiance to them when they sent Agnus to hinder me? Those damn scum, I'll pop them like popcorn and drink them like Coke.*

*-... Aren't you giving the empire a chance to invade?*

*-They won't invade right away. They are afraid of the Overgeared Kingdom. Well, once they handle some of the ethnic tribe immigrants, they will move onto Valhalla.*

*-What will you do?*

*-Let's see... Overgeared King, you should take care of me.*

*-You want me to send reinforcements?*

*-No, it's enough to send me items.*

*-...?*

*-I would like to arm my soldiers with your items. Of course, I will purchase them at a fair*

*price and I won't forget this grace for the rest of my life.*

Ares believed that if the most powerful army was equipped with the strongest items, there would be no need to fear the empire's invasion. But Grid still found it difficult to trust Ares. He couldn't rule out the possibility of the overgeared Ares Army becoming enemies. Ares seemed to read his mind and added.

*-As a reference, I really like you. I don't want to be your enemy.*

*-... Come to think of it, you are an uncle.*

*-Huh?*

*-No, nothing. I need to discuss this with Lael.*

Why was he only loved by men? Grid was seriously worried as he told Ares he would think about it. Then he had a consultation with Lael. Lael spoke honestly.

"If Ares made this proposal yesterday, I would've refused. But..."

"But?"

"It is different from the past. Accept Ares' demands. Sell items and make money."

"Why?"

"So what if Ares tries to hit you in the back of the head? Use the spark of darkness sealed in the burning blade. Kuk! Kukukuk!"

"..."

Lael declared that Grid's power was now at a national level.

"Leave the trade with Valhalla to me and leave now. Please conquer the Behen Archipelago and come back."

# Chapter 673

“Umm... The Behen Archipelago.”

Grid made a reluctant expression and judged that it was too premature. Lael gave a different opinion, however.

"Didn't you say that the guardian of the 61st island is the legendary assassin Lantier?"

“To be precise, it is Lantier who has become a death knight that has also been armed with Pagma's items!”

"He must be strong. But Your Majesty, haven't you already set up a plan to deal with Lantier? You created an armor that can nullify Lantier's attack power.”

Grid had many pieces of armor: ‘Triple Layers,’ the piece of armor that specialized in physical resistance, ‘Lantier's Cloak,’ the ‘Horned Helmet,’ and the ‘Large Gloves.’ Grid nodded.

"I don't think you would speak empty flattery... Certainly, I won't die as quickly as I did before. But what about my weapon?"

Grid was concerned about his weapon.

“This time, I made the Enlightenment Sword, a demonic sword—the best tool to use against divine beings, but not the most powerful one against the undead.”

Death Knight Lantier was strictly classified as a monster with dark properties. The additional 30% dark damage from the Enlightenment Sword would work as a heal for him. Lantier's evasion rate was also exceptional, so Grid wondered if he could actually dispose of the named boss monster.

“Hrmm... Are you saying you need to make a holy sword first?"

"That would be good."

“It makes sense. It is great to prepare without needing to worry about the death

penalty... Then do you have enough material to use for a holy sword?"

"Mithril is easily available on the market."

"Mithril!" shouted Lael as he suddenly rose from his seat. Grid was surprised by the unexpectedly severe response.

"W-What? Why are you so excited?"

"I'm not excited right now! This is a holy sword, a holy sword! Yet you are planning to make it out of mithril?!"

"..."

Mithril was powerful against the undead and was classified as an advanced mineral. That was just a perception common to ordinary players, however.

"Isn't the demonic sword made of Belial's Horn? If you're planning to make a holy sword, shouldn't its material be on the same level as that of the demonic sword?"

"...Come to think of it..."

The Blade Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires was a myth rated weapon. Assuming he was dealing with the undead, the Enlightenment Blade would be more powerful than a legendary mithril weapon.

"Right. It doesn't make sense to use ordinary materials for my weapon."

"I'm glad you understood my words properly."

In the future, all of Grid's dedicated weapons should aspire to be 'at least' the level of the Enlightenment Sword. It was significant.

Grid realized it.

'...Then where can I find the materials for a holy sword?'

Even adamantium couldn't compare to Belial's Horn. In order to obtain sacred materials on the same grade as Belial's Horn...

'Should I kill an angel?'

For what reason?

'No, can I even meet an angel?'

Grid's head started to become cluttered.

"Grid?"

Sage Sticks came to visit. He was called by Lauel.

"Are you going to the Behen Archipelago?"

Sticks' desire was for the Behen Archipelago to be purified. He hoped that the Behen Archipelago would re-establish itself as the Hall of Fame, and was very glad that Grid would challenge the Behen Archipelago again. Grid saw his bright expression and scratched his cheek.

"No, I think it should be postponed."

Grid thought Sticks would understand, as he knew exactly how powerful the guardians for the islands in the 60s were. Sticks reaction wasn't as expected, however,

"Why do you want to postpone it?"

"Why? I'm still weak."

"Huh?"

"..."

A strange response! Grid was confused.

"What's with this reaction? Sticks, didn't you see Lantier's strength? I wasn't able to touch him before."

"That is an old story. A death knight who loses its owner doesn't grow. Then what about you? You have all types of new armor and weapons, making you incomparably stronger than before. You can defeat Lantier now."

“ .. ”

Lauel and Sticks. Once the smart people repeatedly spoke about Lantier like he was easy, Grid felt like a fool.

‘Maybe I am underestimating myself?’

That’s right. Grid had grown by leaps and bounds since he had first challenged the Behen Archipelago. His items had been strengthened a few times, and both his character level and skill level had steadily increased. He had even earned legendary titles such as ‘Savior of the World’ and ‘First King.’ However, Grid wasn’t able to think objectively because the shock of Lantier in the past was too great.

"Even if I can defeat Lantier, the Behen Archipelago doesn’t end at the 61st island. Doesn’t it have 66 islands? I have to fight many legendary death knights in a row. Wouldn’t it be safer to have a holy sword ready?"

"I see. You think that a holy sword is indispensable because a death knight is evil. But a death knight is an undead before it is evil, making it vulnerable to explosive attacks and the light attribute."

An undead’s endurance was weak. Of course, in the case of high-level undead, their defense was also high. But defense and endurance were different concepts, however. While their defense might be high, a strong explosion would be able to separate and weaken the bones.

"I heard rumors that the sword you made has a strong explosion effect. You can easily defeat the undead with it."

“ .. ”

There was no reason to delay any longer. Grid’s scared mind was freed by Sticks’ words.

“The conclusion is that the Behen Archipelago is easy?”

“...No, not that far...”

“Okay! Okay, let's go! Go! Right away!”

It was sad when thinking about it. He was the king, but he was forced to go on a business trip.

‘I feel like a salaryman, not a king!’

Grid felt a complete sense of isolation for some reason and asked Lael before he left,

“Is it okay if I leave at this time? Won’t it be dangerous if the empire strikes?”

Grid knew that the empire was in a situation that made it difficult to move troops. However, the empire had the Red Knights. If Lael carried out his plan to not offer a tribute to the empire this month, the empire was likely to threaten the Overgeared Kingdom with the Red Knights. Lael reassured Grid.

“I received news that a person who pretended to be the descendant of the Undefeated King has appeared in Lubana. Thus, the Red Knights have been dispatched on a large scale. It is one of the reasons why Ares was able to beat the imperial envoy. The empire can’t do anything to us right now.”

“The Undefeated King...?”

Grid was dimly aware of Undefeated King Madara. During the time of the 2nd National Competition, the commentators mentioned it while talking about Bubat’s Undefeated King’s Battle Gear Set.

"The king of Lubana, who never defeated the empire..."

Perhaps!

“Is Bubat the descendant of the Undefeated King?”

Bubat was someone whose status conditions ‘always’ applied. He couldn’t be ignored if he had the power of the Undefeated King. Lael shook his head at the wary Grid.

“His identity is unknown. In addition, we aren't in a place to worry about them.”

The appearance of the Undefeated King was helping both Overgeared and Valhalla. Their identity was unknown, and while they might be an enemy in the future, they were welcome right now. It was too early to be wary.

“We just need to do what we have to do.”



The Behen Archipelago was the Hall of Fame that honoured the achievements of past legends and handed down legacies to the current legends. It could be considered an important base in the human world (middle world). Thus, it became the target of great demons.

The great demons, wary of the legends who could threaten them despite their status as trivial humans, invaded the Behen Archipelago to conquer it. Out of all this, Pagma came out, gaining a transcendent power through a contract with the 1st great demon, Baal. He transformed the Behen Archipelago and intercepted the great demons, consequently defeating them.

But the Behen Archipelago wasn't able to function properly in the aftermath. The Behen Archipelago was no longer the Hall of Fame, nor was it a place of succession after it was converted by Pagma. It became an impregnable fortress that existed only to hurt intruders. Sticks saw this as 'contaminated.'

"I can't deny Pagma's feat. If it weren't for Pagma, the middle world would've be a playground for demons right now, and neither of us would've existed. I respect Pagma and am grateful to him.

But.

"Pagma's choice resulted in the weakening of the middle world. The Behen Archipelago lost its function, and the memories of the feats and visions of the past legends were forgotten. The legends weren't able to exert their full strength, except for those who pioneered a new legend on their own like Piaro. They are another matter."

“People”? There is someone else who became a new legend besides Piaro?”

"I can't rule out the possibility. Somewhere else, a new human or elf might've become a legend in their field. Of course, it is very unlikely, but it's still possible."

“...Indeed.”



Satisfy was wide. Sticks only spoke about humans and elves, but there might be legends among other species such as dwarves or orcs.

‘No, a new legend is bound to emerge.’

It wouldn’t just be the existing legends. The damn S.A Group would raise the difficulty level of the game and it was unknown what type of work they were doing. Sticks placed a hand on Grid’s shoulder.

“Let’s depart.”

Sticks had very big hopes for Grid. Grid was Pagma's Descendant so it seemed like his destiny was to cleanse the Behen Archipelago.

"Restore the Hall of Fame and become a legendary hero."

‘Legendary hero...’

It was like saying to be a hero of heroes.

‘It is similar to being a celebrity of celebrities?’

The moment Grid shook.

*Paaaat!*

His field of view blinked black. It was the Mass Teleport of Sticks after the coordinates of the Behen Archipelago were inputted.

# Chapter 674

Corpse storage: an inventory exclusive to necromancers that could permanently store a total of 5 NPCs or monsters. AS such, necromancers had a habit of storing the body of a named NPC or raid boss monster that they had previously acquired in a quest or event.

They did this in order to gather excellent corpses and to use the best corpse among them as the material of a death knight. In other words, the corpse storage was for concepts such as a death knight 'candidate' collection. Agnus had one body in the corpse storage.

[Lantier's Remains]

Rating: Legendary

The remains of the 15th Lantier, who was revered as a legendary assassin.

"...I'd like to try this guy out, but it's just too hard to raise the dominance stat."

Agnus sought out the Behen Archipelago in order to find Pagma's legacy, which belonged to Baal's former contractor.

He had fought two days and nights against Lantier on the 61st island. Both his death knights and liches lost experience several times, and he even had to invoke the passives of the liches. In short, it was a tough battle, in which he struggled with stamina control. Agnus got a thrill just from remembering it. He was solely focused on the battle!

'A level 400 death knight using a legendary body...'

Moreover, Lantier was an assassin. His agility seemed made him seem like a living being, as compared to Agnus' death knights. Agnus was convinced that Lantier would

be comparable to Lich Mumud.

‘Once I raise my level and gain the required amount of dominance, I can use Lantier as if he were my very own arms and legs.’

He would rechallenge the 62nd island, which he had failed.

“...I will obtain all of the legendary death knights remaining on the islands.”

Agnus realized it now. The fact that the legendary death knights on the Behen Archipelago were Pagma’s legacy and that they were armed with his items.

‘More.’

More and more strength.

‘I will crush and break everything.’

There was no entertainment as good as slaughter and destruction. Now he could understand the feelings of the trash who used to plague him to death...

“Kuk!”

Agnus stumbled while lost in thought and shook his head. He felt a terrible headache when he realized his own mind had become distorted enough to understand the trash that destroyed his life and killed his beloved. It was a type of self-defense mechanism.

“Hah... Hah... Kik, kikik.”

Agnus licked his sweat with his tongue and barely managed to laugh. He tried to ignore the past and the meaningless reality before shouting,

“Veradin! Veradin!”

"Did you call?"

The palace where Empress Marie and the Rose Knights resided. Agnus didn’t care about Marie as he shouted, and Veradin was quickly summoned. Veradin hastily rushed over and Agnus declared,

"I am going to the Behen Archipelago right now."

"Huh?"

Veradin was upset. The death knight of the Demon Slayer Alex defended the 62nd island and Agnus couldn't beat him right now. Veradin couldn't help but feeling puzzled at the prospect of Agnus going to the Behen Archipelago without any preparations.

"You will fail if you challenge it again right now. Why are you doing such a pointless..."

Veradin fell silent in the middle of his question after seeing the tears in Agnus' bloodshot eyes.

"You..."

"I have to fight...! I must forget!"

"..."

That's right. Agnus wanted to forget the memories of the past and reality by concentrating on fighting against those who were strong. It was a very desperate wish. Veradin understood his heart, but was forced to stop it.

"I would rather you go to Empress Marie and receive a quest. It isn't the time to head to the Behen Archipelago yet. Right now, it's pointless to weaken yourself with repeated, meaningless defeats. Not only will this not help you, it will also eventually lead you away from your wish. Now, take a deep breath and regain your composure."

"..."

Veradin was a young man with a beautiful appearance, but his voice was as deep as a cave. There was a charisma in the low voice that gave the listeners intense confidence. Thanks to this, Agnus' mind gradually calmed down. Veradin noticed it and continued speaking.

"Don't be anxious. The Behen Archipelago will stay standing forever until you gain enough strength."

The difficulty level of the Behen Archipelago was terrible. Even Kraugel couldn't clear

the Behen Archipelago. Veradin was convinced of this based on his superior brain and Agnus agreed after regaining his composure.

"Kuk... Kukuk, yes. I will challenge the Behen Archipelago later. I will go to Marie. I hope she has prepared a fun quest this time too."



"Why don't you tell Grid about Agnus' past?"

Faker asked. Faker thought that Grid deserved to know about Agnus, who would continue to be an enemy in the future. But Lauel gave a different opinion. He shared Agnus' past with all the leaders of Overgeared except Grid. The reason was simple.

"Grid isn't heartless."

At first glance, he was selfish. But Grid drew a line at inflicting damage to others forever. Basically, it meant he was full of compassion.

What if he learned about Agnus' past?

"Rather than using that past as a weakness, it is more likely that Grid will sympathize. He will feel disturbed when dealing with the psychopath."

"..."

Faker didn't agree. He knew that Grid's compassion was limited to 'his people.' He had never seen Grid show mercy to an enemy.

Lauel smiled bitterly.

"Agnus' past overlaps with Grid's past. It means Grid will feel a sense of homogeneity and this might lead to sympathy."

Of course, the weight was different. The harassment that Agnus experienced was much greater than the harassment that Grid was subjected to. But it was equally painful. A person's pain couldn't be discussed.

"I just hope they don't become entangled."

Lauel spoke his wish while looking out the window. He was certain that Agnus was a poison to Grid. It was terrible that Agnus had such a past, but Lauel had no intention of defending how twisted he became. Faker watched him quietly in the darkness before asking.

"Why does Veradin serve Agnus?"

Veradin had been famous since his rookie days. It was enough to form double pillars with Lauel and people's evaluation of him was still the best. Faker couldn't understand why such a person would serve Agnus. Lauel came up with a shocking interpretation.

"Veradin isn't serving Agnus. He's observing Agnus as an interesting experiment."

"...Experiment?"

"Veradin is a psychologist."

"..."

In the end, Agnus was still alone in the world. Lauel thought he was a poor person.



[You have entered the 60th island.]

The Behen Archipelago. Grid appeared at the last save point before the 61st island. By his side was the beautiful elf Sticks, although he was a male.

"I suddenly thought of something. Will Muller's death knight be the guardian of the 66th island?"

The legend that even Braham recognized as the strongest. Grid thought it would be impossible to conquer the Behen Archipelago if he had to face Muller. Sticks reassured him.

"Pagma can't make Muller a death knight, even if contracted with Baal. Muller was a noble soul."

“...He truly is the best, with no rivals.”

Did this mean he survived after dying? Then Grid heard a familiar voice.

“Sticks! Sticks! Sticks!!”

It was the voice of the little fairy Bini, who guided the challengers of the Behen Archipelago in Sticks’ absence. What was so urgent? This little fellow was making a fuss as he flew around Grid and Sticks.

“Pant pant.”

Bini seemed to have something to say but he consumed a lot of his stamina from flying in a hurry. He couldn’t speak for a long time before he was gasping for breath.

‘This is why exercise is important.’

Tonight, he would do 200 push ups and 100 squats and pull-ups before sleeping! Grid started reconsidering the workout plan he had been following for a few years.

“The 61st island...! The 61st island was cleared!”

“What?”

Both Grid and Sticks were surprised. Death Knight Lantier. The monster whose swiftness and stealth reached the extremes was defeated?

‘Who?’

Grid had secured the first legendary class and had been growing continuously since then. At this moment, he fell behind again. The impact on Grid was beyond imagination. He resented his lowly talent that made him fall behind, despite having a legendary class. As Grid was feeling frustrated, the small fairy spoke the name of a completely unexpected person.

“Agnus...! He said he was called Agnus! He was a completely crazy person!”

“Agnus?”

The person who made Grid almost taste defeat in front of the whole world was

standing before him again? Grid's blood became heated. His eyes were burning like when he faced Kraugel at the National Competition.

“...”

The usual Grid lost his calmness every time he became heated up, just like any other person. But.

"What about the 62nd island? Did he also clear the 62nd island?"

Grid was different from ordinary people. When he thought about someone he recognized as a 'competitor,' all the passion gave him a cool head.

"He didn't capture the 62nd island. He died from a few gunshots."

"Gun? The 62nd island is guarded by the former Demon Slayer?"

It meant Grid had to fight with Blackening sealed. But he had to take that penalty.

'I have to attack the 66th island. I must break through the 62nd island without Blackening.'

Agnus had cleared the 61st island despite not yet evolving to a legendary class. Grid had started to peek at the myths beyond the legends so he couldn't be worse than Agnus.

"I will go to the 62nd island."

Grid said while attaching the Enlightenment Blade onto Sword Ghost.

"Good luck."

Sticks smiled gently and cheered him on. On the other hand, Bini was turning blue.

"H-H-How can you challenge the 62nd island that the crazy human failed to do? You also didn't break through the 61st island!"

"That was a long time ago."

*Supaak!*



Grid stepped towards the gate that was created in front of him. Bini didn't know what to do as Grid's appearance disappeared.

"S-Sticks. Shouldn't you say something? That person is going to die again!"

"No."

"...?"

"He will purify the Behen Archipelago and win the title of Hero King."

Sticks said significantly while pulling out a crystal ball. Bini's eyes widened the moment he found Grid's appearance.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

Black flames blew towards Death Knight Alex!

# Chapter 675

[You have entered the 61st island.]

[The island is already purified.]

Immediately after stepping foot through the gate. Grid warped to the 61st island and faced the expected situation.

‘Indeed, the bosses of the 60th islands don’t regenerate.’

It was easy to infer since Bini said that the 61st island had been cleared. In the first place, this was the end content of the Behen Archipelago. For the development of the story, the bosses of the 60th islands had to be finite. If the bosses infinitely regenerated then the story of the Behen Archipelago wouldn’t come to a conclusion.

‘This means that the person who eats the islands in the 60’s first...’

Preemption was important. From Grid’s viewpoint, he missed out on Lantier.

‘It’s likely that Agnus obtained Lantier’s cloak and dagger...’

It would be lucky if he only obtained items. Considering Agnus’ personality, there was the possibility of him securing Death Knight Lantier.

‘No, isn’t that too much of a leap? If he got Death Knight Lantier, wouldn’t he have used in when he fought me in the Belto Kingdom?’

The landscape that unfolded in front of the deep in thought Grid was very beautiful. A cool breeze blew through the wide meadows and spread dandelion seeds. The horizon beyond the meadows looked like a jewel. It was an unbelievably spectacular sight compared to the desolate wasteland Grid had come to before.

*Step, step.*

Grid hastened his pace. He didn't have enough free time to watch the scenery. Someone else would be challenging the Behen Archipelago at this moment. He was nervous at the thought of them possibly reaching the 60th islands.

'The remaining bosses are all mine.'

Grid's greed was burning! He moved to the gate of the 62nd island without any hesitation. At the same time.

[You have entered the 62nd island.]

*Tang! Tang tang!*

The moment the scenery changed. The moment Grid's darkened vision was restored and he faced the notification windows, four jade light bullets flew towards him. It was the surprise attack of the guardian of the 62nd island, Demon Slayer Alex. In fact, Agnus encountered this surprise attack as soon as he entered the 62nd island and proceeded to fight in adverse circumstances. Most players, not just Agnus, would've allowed the surprise attack.

Alex's attack speed was 0.25. It meant he could fire four bullets per second, meaning he could attack four times per second. It was impossible for an ordinary player to cope with Alex's surprise attack, as a gun had the highest accuracy of all weapons.

But who was Grid? He was the peak of the overgeared people. Grid was different.

*Tatatatang!*

The battle ready Grid had summoned the God Hands and their effect was fraudulent. The God Hands moved around Grid and protected him from Alex's bullets.

"You have no manners."

Grid accused Alex after calming down his surprised heart and rushing forward. Alex used guns, so Grid's top priority was to narrow the distance. It was a textbook judgment. It was too obvious.

*Clink!*

Death knight. Their reasoning abilities might be lost, but their fighting skills in the past were fully preserved. Alex was skillful. As soon as Grid narrowed the distance, he converted the magic engineering gun into sword form and responded to the attack.

*Chaeeeeeng!*

“...!”

Grid swung the Enlightenment Blade attached to Sword Ghost. He was surprised while defending against Alex’s counterattack.

‘Why is his speed so fast?’

Grid thought it was a characteristic of the weapon or a skill when Alex fired four shots in a row. But Alex managed to swing his sword four times a second. It was really a basic attack. There were no precursors to using a buff or skills.

‘Human’ players and NPCs had a basic attack speed of 1 (1 per second. Of course, this figure might increase depending on the type of weapon used). Given that the attack rest was estimated to be 0.25, Alex’ agility must be at least 8,000.

‘No, it’s impossible.’

Based on Yura, a Demon Slayer’s core stats were strength and intelligence. She also needed to invest a few points into stamina for survival. The Demon Slayer class didn’t have enough room to invest points in agility.

‘Is the lack of agility covered by the gun?’

Due to the nature of the weapon, guns had a lot of options that would increase the attack speed. However, it was a different story for a sword. It was highly probably that the attack speed option wasn’t available when the magic engineering gun was in sword mode.

Alex must have a passive or attribute that allowed him to swing a sword four times per second.

‘Like assassins or swordsmen, does a Demon Slayer have a passive that increases their

attack speed?’

For example, an assassin’s attack speed was increased due to the class characteristics as well as a passive skill. On top of that, the assassin steadily increased their agility stat so they had the fastest attack speed among all classes. As a simple example, Faker hit an average of two times per second and occasionally three times.

‘Instead, his attack power is weak!’

*Jeeeong!*

It wasn’t just Faker. Most assassins had to cover their lack of damage from their low strength stat with active skills. Once an active skill was used, the assassin’s attack power was extremely high. But Alex?

*Jjejeong!*

*Jjeejeeong!*

Every basic strike that he aimed at Grid was as powerful as an assassin. Alex combined the attack speed of an assassin and the attack power of a swordsman!

‘Che!’

Fortunately, Alex’s attack power wasn’t high enough to stiffen the God Hands. Grid was able to hold on thanks to the God Hands and counterattacked from time to time. But.

*Kuaaaaang!*

Not surprisingly, Alex didn’t just use basic attacks. The moment he aimed four bullets at Grid, the unique jade light of a Demon Slayer also covered Grid in an explosion. It was an explosion that only occurred when Grid grasped the chance for a counterattack.

‘His control is good...’

Grid became irritated as he started accumulating damage with every explosion. He desperately felt how powerful Alex was. It wasn’t clear how strong Alex must’ve been when he was alive.

*Chaeng!*

*Chaeeeeeng!*

But there was still hope, as Grid didn't allow any critical attacks. He had the four God Hands. They blocked most of the four attacks that Alex unleashed in one second. Grid once again felt awe at the God Hands.

'This game is truly about items.'

An opportunity came in the midst of the crisis. The God Hands were steadily building up experience while blocking Alex's strikes. Now the experience of the God Hands was at 70%. If he fought for a whole month with Alex, the rating of the God Hands would rise to legendary. But.

"I will be behind if I wait a month...! Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

Grid ignored Alex's intermittent explosions and started a sword dance.

*Hwaruruk!*

Flames sparked from the Enlightenment Blade and followed Grid's movements. It looked like a red dragon's black tongue.

"Link!"

Four basic attacks per second?

This was the strongest skill that attacked 20 times per second!

*Jjang! Jjeejeeong!*

*Pit!*

*Pipipipit!*

".....!"

The alert Alex was ready to defend, but it was meaningless. Alex could only defend against Grid's first four strikes. Then he was hit by a Mjolnir wielded by a God Hand

and his body was bombarded by sword strikes. The original Link had the drawback of not having enough attack power to threaten boss monsters.

[You have dealt 240,555 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 235,900...]

...

...

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has added 5,000 fire damage!]

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has added 5,000 fire...]

...

...

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[You have dealt 3,673,800 damage to the target.]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires...]

[You have dealt 4,392,220 damage to the target.]

[The option effect 'Black Flames'...]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 9,215,090 damage to the target.]

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

The chance of activating the black flames with every attack was demonstrated when combined with this skill. The black flames that constantly exploded was enough to cover the lacking attack power of Link, making it worthy of the strongest attack skill Pinnacle Kill.

“...Amazing.”

When Grid first used Failure, the overwhelming attack power of the Holy Light Gloves combined with Kill was still intact in his mind. The thrill when he used Failure to defeat the field boss was enormous. At this moment, that thrill completely disappeared from Grid’s mind. Grid was able to experience a new level with the Enlightenment Sword that Failure couldn’t give him!

*Duk.*

Alex suffered continuous explosive damage. He lost one third of his health and his left arm bone fell off. It was a scene proving that the undead was vulnerable to explosions. Now Alex had one hand.

“...”

Silence filled the desolate 62nd island. The only speaker, Grid, had shut up. He was in a trance as he admired the power of Link and the Enlightenment Blade.

‘...Is this real?’

He felt invincible! He felt like he could also win against Piaro... No, this was an illusion.

*Clink!*

Did Alex feel a sense of crisis after losing one arm? While Grid was lost in thought for a moment, Alex transformed the sword back into a gun.

*Tang!*

*Tatatatang!*



Alex fired four bullets every time he stepped back. He occasionally used the Continuous Fire skill and the God Hands couldn't keep up with the bullets. A heavy rain of bullets broke through the God Hands' defence and wounded Grid's body.

"Kuk!"

Grid regained his mind as he became bloody in an instant. He realized that it wasn't the time for admiration. This was the Behen Archipelago. It was an instant dungeon that caused Grid to complain about the difficulty several months ago. Grid reminded himself that it wasn't the time to be thinking about items. He took out the Ideal Dagger, used Quick Movements and caught up with Alex.

[You have suffered 5,200 damage.]

[You have suffered 4,880 damage.]

[You have suffered 5,150...]

...

...

Despite giving up the Holy Light Gloves and arming himself with Triple Layers, Alex's bullets were powerful. He continued to fire at the approaching Grid and considerable damage accumulated.

Grid's health gauge, which was still less than 100,000, quickly disappeared as he narrowed the distance to Alex. Grid's goal was to defeat Alex before the immortal passive kicked in. He thought it was possible with the attack power of the Enlightenment Sword.

But Alex didn't repeat the same mistake. After realizing that Grid's approach could threaten him, he didn't let Grid near.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeng!*

[You have suffered 15,900 damage.]

“Kuaaaaak!”

Suddenly? No, was it planted in advance? Grid was rushing towards Alex, only to step on a mine and was swept up in an explosion. The force of the explosion was so big that Grid’s body flew back one metre. It was a mine that contained the unique magic power of a Demon Slayer. Despite Grid wearing Triple Layers, the mine contained so much attack power that it would’ve been deadly if he used Blackening.

“Shit...”

The fallen Grid quickly got up.

*Clink!*

Alex switched his magic engineering gun from a pistol to a sniper rifle. It was the sniper mode that Yura couldn’t use yet.

*Peeeeeeong!*

An explosion occurred right when Alex was aiming at Grid. It was from Alex’s head!

# Chapter 676

*Peeeeeeong!*

“.....!”

A sudden explosion! Alex shook while aiming the sniper gun at Grid. Grid had a wide smile on his face.

“Heh, how about this?”

This might not be his field of confidence, but Grid took an attitude of trying to learn no matter the circumstances. He even studied the domestic affairs that were handled by Lauel. It was a habit resulting from the serious obsession of not going back to being a loser. Of course, his learning ability was slow due to his innately low intelligence. However, this wasn't a big problem. No matter how stupid, he would improve a little bit if he kept trying.

A desire to be better than he was! Grid was filled with hot aspirations during his battle with Agnus. Then he developed.

*Jiing.*

*Pepepepeng!*

There was no guarantee of victory in a confrontation with the strong. He had to induce constant variables and the skill most suitable to cause a variable during his battle with Agnus was the Alarm spell. Thanks to this, Grid was conscious of the Alarm spell since the beginning of the fight with Alex.

He predicted that Alex would once again open the distance after becoming alert to the powerful attack of Link and arranged the Alarm spell in Alex's predicted movement path. Of course, Grid wasn't smart and couldn't predict the exact path. As a result, he wasted a lot of mana placing magic over a wide range.

‘I only have enough mana to use the ultimate skills two more times... Eh?’

Just like all rankers, Grid's flow of consciousness sped up during a battle. The proper eruption of adrenaline had a positive effect. Thus, Grid's judgment was quick.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

Alex hadn't let go of the sniper position despite Alarm being triggered and Magic Missile being fired.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

Alex fired the sniper rifle at Grid.

"Revolve."

Grid immediately used his strongest counterattack skill that could 'deflect all types of attacks.' But it was useless. The sniper mode of the magical engineering gun had the option of 'make sure to hit the target' in exchange for taking a significant amount of time to aim. This was the same concept as reality. It wasn't a question of speed. A human's body was already pierced with a bullet by the time they heard the gun being fired.

It was the same with Grid. He couldn't expect the protection of the God Hands right now.

*Peeng!*

".....!"

The bullet from the sniper rifle left a jade afterglow as it pierced between Grid's brow and the sound of a watermelon bursting was heard. In a sense, his head had burst. The psychological fear that Grid felt was enormous.

[You have died!]

[A legend doesn't die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

"Ah...!"

Grid's body instantly became soaked with sweat. It wasn't an exaggeration when he said he was like a drowning rat. Didn't he feel his head bursting like a watermelon? Grid's first action was to touch his head with trembling hands. He was worried that he might be suffering from a body that lost its head. Fortunately, Grid's head was fine. The head drilled in his forehead had also been restored. There were some cases of monsters or NPCs' heads being cut off, but even the S.A. Group avoided players having their heads burst.

"Pant... Pant..."

Grid's breathing became rough from the terrible experience while fear also rose in him. Normally, he would've acted with all his strength during the five seconds of immortality. But he already wasted two seconds recovering his soul. Alex didn't miss this gap.

*Tang tang! Tatatatang!*

Alex was convinced that the intruder had suffered deadly damage and was embarking on a more aggressive offensive. The sniper was converted back to a pistol and bullets were constantly fired at Grid.

"..."

The intruder was a great demon. Protect the Behen Archipelago from the great demons and save humanity. This was the command that Pagma, his summoner, gave him and was the driving force behind Death Knight Alex. Alex wouldn't stop attacking until he died. The result?

*Tatatatang!*

As only two seconds remained for the immortality passive, Grid's body had already become riddled with bullets. Alex used quick fire skills without a sense of reason. At this point, Grid's fury reached its peak.

"...Making me consume my immortality."

It meant he couldn't immediately challenge the next island.

"Thanks to you, I have to grind for another day. Blackening!"

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

A whirlwind emerged and covered Grid. Grid's skin turned pale and the whites of his eyes became black. Even his visible breath was black.

Your black magic power has increased.]

[You don't have any black magic power. It will be replaced with demonic power.]

[While Blackening is activated, your species will change to half-demon.]

[As a half demon, your maximum health is reduced by 50%. Your attack power, magic power and agility will increased by 30% each.]

[All attacks will be converted to the dark attribute.]

His body was already in the immortal state! Grid didn't need to be afraid of taking additional damage from Demon Slayer Alex. The key to ending this battle as soon as possible was Blackening. But.

[There is one second remaining on the immortality passive.]

Could he beat Alex, with two thirds of his health gauge remaining, in one second?

"Blacksmith's Rage!"

*Tang tang!*

*Tatatatang!*

Grid used a buff and rushed in a straight line. There was no need for evasive behaviour and Grid succeeded in quickly narrowing the distance to Alex. His agility also rose due to Blackening.

“Item Transformation! Lifaël’s Spear!”

*Kuoooooooooh!*

The God Hands turned into golden spears and pierced Alex at the same time.

[The duration of immortality is over.]

Grid’s life became finite.

*Clink!*

Alex’s skull seemed to be smiling as he pointed the pistol at Grid. Grid hadn’t been able to enjoy the effect of Tiramet’s Belt and the First King title due to an instantaneous death with nearly 50% of his health remaining. He only had 1 health point left and was facing Alex’s pistol...

‘...He is calm?’

The 60th island. Sticks was startled while watching Grid’s battle. Grid was on the threshold of death and facing Alex who had almost half his health left. Yet Grid’s eyes didn’t shake at the pistol aiming at him. An unbelievable calm had settled over him. Sticks thought that Grid’s composure was abnormal.

‘The one who is blessed by the gods.’

People were small in front of death. The countless challengers who stepped onto the Behen Archipelago felt frustration and despair when facing death. Yet Grid didn’t seem fazed at all.

*Taaang!*

In the crystal ball. Alex's pistol fired from in front of Grid. The sound of the gunshot caused Sticks and Bini to close their eyes. Both of them was expecting Grid's death. But Grid didn't give up. He didn't feel frustration or despair. The worst scenario?

'How many times did I not experience the worst?'

Grid was already very familiar with it.

*Taaang!*

The moment Alex fired his pistol.

"Freely Move!"

It was the skill attached to the title 'Secret Hero.' It was a high level dash skill that avoided all attacks until it reaches the 'desired target' within 200 meters.

"...!!"

Alex's purple light shook. He was confused that the four bullets fired from right in front of Grid were avoided with easy movements of the head.

"Heok...!"

Sticks and Bini were astonished as they watched Grid through the crystal ball. In particular, Sticks was so surprised that he felt a recurrence of his heart disease. Then Grid...

[The option effect 'Ecstasy of Desire' has activated from the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[Your attack power will increase by three times and your evasion by 99% for 20 seconds.]

[Your defense has become 0.]



*Teong!*

Grid dodged all the bullets thanks to the close deployment of Freely Move. He shoved Alex with his shoulders and then followed Alex, who was moving back.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship...!”

Was it the strongest skill Pinnacle Kill? It was insufficient. Grid wanted to use a higher damage skill in order to take advantage of the 200% option attached to the Enlightenment Blade. But Pagma’s Swordsmanship had the deadly disadvantage of a long cooldown time and Link was still on cooldown.

Yet Grid didn’t have anything to worry about. For Grid, Link’s higher skill Transcended Link was still left!

“Transcended Link.”

“.....!”

*Kwa kwang!*

*Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

A turbulent storm of energy blades at short range! Alex’s body became mangled.

*Kuwaaaaaaaaang!*

The energy blades appeared many times and swallowed him up. The 62nd island shook several times. It was enough momentum to make someone fall down. On the other hand, Death Knight Alex was occasionally healed by the dark damage...

“Kiyaaaaaaaaaack!”

The power of Grid’s buff skills and Ecstasy of Desire was overwhelming. It wasn’t a level that could be withstood with a certain amount of recovery. The 62nd island was purified.

[Death Knight Alex has been defeated!]

[You have succeeded in beating the 62nd island!]

[Alex's Magic Engineering Bayonet (Produced by Pagma) has been acquired!]

[Alex's Quick Gloves (Produced by Pagma) have been acquired!]

[As a reward for cleansing the island, you have gained one level!]

*Shaaaaaaah-*

Then a light fell from the sky. The desolate 62nd island was filled with grass and flowers.

“Hah...”

Grid narrowly won. His smile was filled with relief and joy. In fact, it wasn't necessary to give special meaning to playing the game. The game itself was fun and enjoyable.

“Grid! Thank you Grid!”

Sticks made a fuss as he came running from afar. The fairy Bini was flapping his wings beside Sticks. They remembered forgotten dreams and hopes as they saw the increasingly purified Behen Archipelago.

# Chapter 677

"You defeated Alex as I expected. It is truly amazing."

Sticks said with a shining face. Grid was also the same. The two of them were delighted to overcome one big mountain. In particular, the excitement that Sticks felt was very big. He had been waiting for the savior to come and purify the Behen Archipelago. Sticks had been waiting for decades. For him, Grid was like a light of hope.

On the other hand, Grid's excited heart was slowly sinking.

"Sticks, I can see why you asserted that I could clear the Behen Archipelago. Demon Slayer Alex couldn't use any of his original skills."

"..."

Based on what Yura showed during the great demon raid, a Demon Slayer's skills were quite diverse and the power was tremendous. Due to their special characteristics of suppressing demonkin, it would've been possible to restrain Grid in Blackening mode.

However, the only skills that Alex used today was the magic power explosion and sudden attack. He used the unique transformation properties of the magic engineering bayonet to go against Grid. In retrospect, the same was true for Lantier. At the time, Grid hadn't noticed because he was killed so quickly. But when he thought about it now, Lantier only used stealth and didn't show any other special skills.

"...It seems that they have lost most of their life skills after becoming a death knight."

It was a state where their base stats and level had significantly dropped from when they were alive. Yet they couldn't even use skills. The Alex who pushed Grid so much was 10 to 100 times weaker than when he was alive.

"This is the reason why Sticks assured me that I could clear the Behen Archipelago."

*Kkuok!*

Grid's clenched fist shook. His pride was hurt.

'I'm not as strong as the previous legends. It's just that the previous legend's death knights are weak... '

Sticks looked at Grid's trembling body and didn't deny it.

"That's correct. The legendary death knights here are very weak. They're weak compared to when they were alive, but they have become weaker since their owner Pagma disappeared. To be honest, it's shameful to give them the title of legends. That's why I believe that you could beat them."

"...Hah."

Grid could only sigh. His previous excitement was nowhere to be seen. It was natural. He wasted his immortal skill on a death knight which couldn't even be called a legend. He lost his immortality, despite it being an opponent he could win against without losing his immortality.

'This can't continue.'

Grid knew that his tendency to depend on his immortality was too great.

'Now it isn't the power of items, but the power of immortality? Then I should be called the Immortal King, not the Overgeared King.'

Grid didn't realize that at least the Immortal King was more stylish than the Overgeared King. It was a pity. Grid thought back to his battle with Agnus.

'If I didn't have the immortality when I fought him, I would have been defeated... '

At this moment, Grid realized.

'It isn't just Agnus. The reason I won most of my one on one matches wasn't because I was stronger than my opponent. It was because I had the immortal skill.'

Immortality was a unique ability of the legendary classes. No one would blame Grid for winning due to his immortality. It wasn't reprehensible to use the ability he was given. But Grid criticized himself.

'This type of thinking is a poison.'

The problem was that the idea of 'I can't die because I am immortal' was deeply rooted in his subconscious mind. The perception that 'I can win because I have immortality' would make him think that he couldn't win without the immortality. Grid would someday experience a big upset if he didn't fix this rotten mentality.

It was an accurate guess. Grid wasn't aware of it, but he was going through a transformation that an average person rarely experienced. How many people in the world would become aware of their subconscious thoughts and try to fix them when they realized they were rotten? Many writers rationalized their smoking under the pretext of 'I can't write without cigarettes' and failed to quit smoking for more than 10 years. Grid himself didn't know it, but he was already becoming a special person.

"But."

Then Sticks voice entered the ears of the deeply focused Grid. He gave a grim reality to Grid in a calm manner but now he was smiling warmly.

"The death knights here are weaker than when they were alive, but these legends are just specters of the past. There are very few people among those living today who can defeat the death knights here." This was the main point. "Please don't misunderstand. The reason I believed in you was because I trusted your skills, not because I ignored the death knights. I have repeatedly told you this, but you're a great person. Take pride in this."

"..."

It was praise from a sage. The past Grid would've been smiling from ear to ear. He would've scratched his head and smiled with a monkey-like face. However, the current Grid wasn't someone who could become complacent. He wanted to go higher. If he wasn't satisfied then he couldn't rejoice when praised.

"I might be great when compared to ordinary people. However, I have to deal with monsters."

The great demons with the power to drive humanity to destruction, Agnus who had contracted with Baal, the Saharan Empire of the West Continent, Ares bordering the empire, Sword Saint Kraugel who boasted a unique presence, the yangbans of the East Continent...

There were also the Overgeared members. They were special companions and

competitors. If he was careless, he could fall behind.

‘No.’

Grid was already determined to be the best. He believed he was eligible. He had confidence in himself for the first time since he was born. He never wanted to give up.

“Sigh...” Grid took a deep breath and got up. His gaze was resolute. “On the next island, I will win without depending on my immortality.”

“...!”

Sticks was startled. He knew that it took at least one day for the immortality ability of a legend to function again.

"Surely you aren't planning to challenge the 63rd island straight away?"

Without the immortal passive! Sticks was overwhelmed by Grid's determination and shook.

"Am I crazy?" Grid stared at Sticks. "Of course I will challenge it tomorrow."

Grid said he wouldn't depend on the immortality, but that didn't mean he would fight without it.

"Why would I challenge it without my immortality?"

“...”

As expected from Grid. He didn't make a mistake despite his commitment. His high pride was easily bent. He didn't want to receive damage from a futile attempt. It wasn't nice to look at, but it was extremely reasonable.

‘Indeed... This is the king of a nation...’

All of a sudden, Grid took out cloth and started making underwear.

“Umm...”

The greatest attraction of a game was the loot system. Grid had fun when he checked the result of the item he produced and saw that it was a jackpot. But Grid didn't confirm the information of the items he obtained after raiding Alex. It was due to fear.

'The problem is that Death Knight Alex is weak.'

The Alex of the past was unknown. However, Death Knight Alex was too weak to be called a legend. Of course, that was when compared to the former legends. Among the current players, only Grid and Kraugel could raid Death Knight Alex. He was a powerful boss. But due to Sticks, Grid had the perception that Alex was a weakling. He thought that the items dropped by the weakling Alex would be garbage. In the end.

“Ummm...!”

Grid didn't check the item information while making four underwear. He didn't have the courage to face the awful reality. Sticks was frustrated.

"Take a look at the gun and gloves as soon as possible. They will surely be incredible battle gear."

“Wait... I will make one more underwear.”

“...”

No, what was the point of this act? Sticks couldn't understand Grid. However, most players would understand.

'If this underwear has a rare rating then I will check the item information!'

So far, all four underwear that he produced had a normal rating. The underwear production skill level was still low, but Grid thought it was also because he was unlucky.

'The maximum rating that the intermediate level skill can produce is rare... If rare rated underwear appears now, I can interpret it as a moment of luck.'

What if he appraised the items right then?

'The item rating might be higher or there will be one more option...!

Of course, it was an illogical superstition. It was similar to the enhancement superstition floating among the players where a certain time and place was better for enhancement. But humans loved superstitions. They especially relied on it when they encountered content with the concept of probability.

[You have completed the underwear production.]

[Under the effect of the intermediate Underwear Production Method, a rare rated underwear has been produced! There is a very low probability of an option being added!]

*Ttiring~*

[Clean Underwear]

Rating: Rare

Durability: None Defense: 5

\* Agility +1.

There are no distinctive features, but this underwear is very comfortable to wear. Activities are comfortable when wearing it.

Weight: 1

\* When rare rated items are produced, all stats will permanently rise by +2 and reputation throughout the continent will rise by +30.



Grid suffered a terrible penalty to the blacksmith's benefits after producing a certain number of legendary items. Now his stats didn't rise no matter how many rare and epic items he produced. But that was only for blacksmithing. Grid's tailoring and underwear production skills were only intermediate level, so there were no penalties.

"Now!"

Grid felt great please after seeing that all his stats rose by two for free. He believed his luck was bad and shouted in a loud voice.

"Legendary! Blacksmith's! Appraisal!"

"..."

Some of Pagma's Descendants had a disadvantage of being embarrassing since the skill names had to be cried out. But Grid didn't care. Since the point where he shouted Item Combination, he put an iron plate on his face. Now the embarrassment was for the people with him. For example, Sticks whose face had turned red.

[Observing the target item with the legendary blacksmith's eyes.]

[If the item has a hidden feature, it will be found.]

*Ttiring~*

[Alex's Quick Gloves (Produced by Pagma)]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 60/340 Defense: 130

\* Normal attack speed is increased by three times.

Gloves made by the legendary blacksmith and Baal's Contractor, Pagma.

He focused on overcoming the weakness of Death Knight Alex, the guardian of the 62nd island.

Weight: 66

“Two times?”

No.

“It isn’t two, but three times?”

Grid’s heart shook wildly.

# Chapter 678

“ ... ”

Grid thought he had stepped on poop. The durability and defense of the Quick Gloves were so below level that it was hard to believe they were legendary items. In addition, there was only one option attached so it seemed like a garbage item.

‘Did Pagma really make this?’

Looking back on it now, the works of Pagma that Grid had witnessed weren’t that great. The items that the current Grid produced now were often better. But. Grid had never questioned Pagma’s ability. Pagma’s words that Grid had seen so far were from before he reached his prime. They were items Pagma made in the process of growing up. Grid believed that the items Pagma made in his prime would be amazing. And Pagma’s time on the Behen Archipelago was during his last years. It was when he was at his peak.

Yet look at Alex's Quick Gloves! It was absolutely unbelievable that Pagma in his prime made it!

‘Did his blacksmithing abilities weaken after making the contract with Baal?’

Misgivings arose. But those misgivings collapsed quickly.

“...Eh? Three times?”

Grid identified the one option attached to the Quick Gloves and his eyes widened. It was the expression of a person who saw something that shouldn’t exist in this world.

“Wow...”

It wasn’t double the attack speed, but triple?

‘It isn’t even a probability item.’

That’s right. The Quick Gloves were an overpowered item that increased attack speed

by three times. It probably had a much higher expected damage value than the 5 Joint Attacks of the Holy Light Gloves.

“No, it isn’t.”

The Quick Gloves clearly stated that this applied to ‘normal attacks.’ It was the so-called basic attacks. The triple increase in attack speed only applied to this. It was completely different from the Holy Light Gloves where the 5 Joint Attacks could apply to anything.

“I wouldn’t have felt so good about this before making the Enlightenment Blade.”

Most players depended on skills rather than basic attacks. It was natural that skill damage was several times higher than normal damage. It was the same for Grid. No, Grid was more than that. Grid had the legendary Pagma’s Swordsmanship with the highest attack power, and his main weapon was Failure, which increased skill damage. The important thing for him was always skill damage. He wasn’t concerned with basic attacks.

However, that story changed once he made the Enlightenment Blade. The black flames attached to the Enlightenment Blade show power above normal active skills and even activated with basic attacks. Grid wanted the black flames to frequently activate. He wanted to trigger the black flames by attacking more often. Acquiring the Quick Gloves that increased attack speed by three times at this point was pure luck.

“Kuhuhuhu...”

Grid burst out laughing. His legs were slightly relaxed. He was so happy that he couldn’t suppress his emotions. He was glad that he acquired the Quick Gloves so soon after making the Enlightenment Blade that had the strongest ‘basic damage.’ Grid felt like he was the protagonist of the world.

“How can I be so lucky...? Heok.”

Grid was murmuring when he suddenly stopped. He had little experience saying these type of lines so it felt strange.

“Surely this isn’t the end of the world?”

The joy and doubts that Grid felt were proportional. He pinched his cheeks several

times because he thought it might be a dream. Fortunately, it was reality.

“...Let’s buy a lottery ticket.”

Grid was seriously worried! He caressed the ‘orange’ Quick Gloves with satisfied eyes.

‘Even the color is beautiful.’

What were orange gloves? If Grid was a person with normal senses, he would dislike it. Fortunately, Grid wasn’t ordinary and he liked the orange gloves a lot.

‘I need to constantly disassemble and reassemble it to raise my understanding to 100% and challenge a mass production version.’

He had already decided to mass produce Lantier’s Cloak and give them to the evil eyes kingdom. The number of items he needed to mass produce was increasing, making Grid feel proud. He packed the gloves in his inventory and pulled out the magic engineering weapon next.

‘Indeed... ’

Would it be a top rated item like the gloves? Grid shook his head. The problem was that the Quick Gloves were too good.

‘I can’t expect a big profit to come from two items in a row.’

Yes, it was generally like this. Most boss monsters were likely to drop only one core item. For example, if a legendary item dropped, then the rest of the items were likely to be unique and below. It was the same with Belial. She only dropped one myth rated item. Of course, it wasn’t certain that one core item would drop. There was a 99% chance of it dropping, but Grid was likely to hit the 1% chance.

The Quick Gloves had a legendary rating so the remaining magic weapon should be unique or below. It was like Grid expected. Well, only half. Yes, it was half what he expected.

[Observing the target item with the legendary blacksmith’s eyes.]

[If the item has a hidden feature, it will be found.]

*Ttiring~*

[Alex's Magic Engineering Bayonet (Produced by Pagma)]

Rating: Unique (Growth)

Durability: 599/1,260

\* Pistol Mode

Attack Power: 870

Mana Purification Rate: +60%

- If you hit the same target five times, there is a 20% chance of causing an abnormal state.

\* Rifle Mode

Attack Power: 1,416

Mana Purification Rate: -15%

Firing Speed: -20%

\* Bayonet Mode

Attack Power: 1,067

Stabbing Attack Power +50%

- Additional damage every time a combo is achieved.

- The Sword Mastery skill is applicable.

## ★ Sniper Mode

Attack power: Instantaneous death...

Aiming time: 10 seconds to 2 minutes (depending on the distance)

Cooldown Time: 1 hour.

\* Mode conversion is only possible once every four seconds.

A magical engineering bayonet made by the legendary blacksmith and Baal's Contractor, Pagma.

Pagma was inspired by Milepeu and made a bayonet capable of transforming into a sniper rifle, something no dwarven craftsman has managed to do. This is a work that will fascinate the dwarves.

Conditions of Use: Demon Slayer

Weight: 3,050

"It is a unique rating... right?"

The rating was as he expected. But it was a growth item.

'...It is a higher version of the magic engineering gun that Yura is using.'

It was also several times better. A smile appeared on Grid's face as he got two successive benefits.

'Okay, I will give this to Yura.'

Grid didn't even contemplate the idea of using it himself. He was already familiar with how troublesome and difficult it was to raise the experience of a growth item.



"Oh, this rotten item experience."

Vantner, who was raising a pair of growth type axes, complained after raiding a named boss. The Overgeared members comforted him.

"Originally, the experience of an item doesn't climb easily. It will take at least a fortnight to raise an item to the rare rating, despite grinding. It might take a few months to grow to the unique rating and years to grow to the legendary rating.

Recently, there had been a 'growth type item' trend among the top rankers. It was because after level 300, the bosses dropped growth type items and their growth potential was explosive. It seemed like a message to prepare to deal with level 400 monsters.

Of course, expectations were only high at this moment. Boss monsters mainly dropped growth type items that started at the normal rating and they were weak, making it hard to use them as a main weapon.

'Come to think of it... Hasn't it been a year since Grid got Elfin Stone's ring?'

"Isn't it over? It has been less than a year since he got Tiramet's Belt."

"Crazy...! And it still hasn't risen to the legendary rating? I can't imagine how difficult it is to raise the item experience."

Vantner had been doing the ultimate grinding for the last fortnight. It was in order to increase the rating of his twin axes. Thus, for the past fortnight, he had only been searching for durable monsters such as a golem. It meant that he hunted level 300 monsters with a normal item. It was really grinding. Even so, the item experience didn't go up easily, making Vantner go crazy. He once again thought that Grid was great.

"I'm feeling anxious, so how can Grid be so calm?"

If he was Grid, he would want to quickly grow an item stuck at the unique rating. The unique rating was annoying. He would want to use it to raise it to the legendary rating quickly. Once he had an idea, he couldn't concentrate on anything else and would devote himself to raising the item experience for months.



But Grid? Grid never showed any impatience about the item rating. Elfin Stone's Ring, Tiramet's Belt, Iyarugt, and the God Hands. Grid didn't seem obsessed with raising the item experience despite having such huge growth items.

"...How is that possible?"

In particular, it was clear that Grid would become more explosive the moment the God Hands grew to the legendary rating. If Vantner was in Grid's position, he would be obsessed with raising the experience of the God Hands.

"But Grid isn't doing that... Is he a block of stone?"

Come to think of it, Grid was like a block of stone when it came to relationships with girls. This was despite so many of the world's best beauties appealing themselves to him. It was suspicious. Ibellin spoke his thoughts to the puzzled Vantner.

"Brother Grid... Maybe he isn't thinking?"

"..."

Certainly, there were many times when it was hard to understand Grid from the point of view of the Overgeared members, who fell into the category of 'genius.' He had many inefficient priorities and they always wondered what he was thinking. Perhaps that was why? No one denied Ibellin's words about Grid. The moment everyone was thinking this.

"You punks!" Peak Sword, who was trying to raise the experience of a one-handed sword, cried out angrily. "Don't think of God Grid like that! This is God Grid you're talking about! He is too busy to obsess over one item! God Grid isn't an ordinary person like us! He is a king, a king! The king of South Korea!"

"..."

No, wasn't the king's work being done by Lael? Many people wanted to say this, but they stayed silent.

In the first place, whatever the truth was, it wasn't important to the Overgeared members. Regardless of how Grid behaved or thought, even if he didn't think, they all respected and admired Grid. They couldn't help feeling admiration when looking at the continuously developing Grid.

# Chapter 679

*Clink!*

Grid converted Alex's Magic Engineering Bayonet to sniper mode and checked the maximum distance. The sniping distance wasn't mentioned in the item description. Grid used a target to identify the distance.

'87 meters...'

Of course, every noble Korean male who joined the army would know. The fact that you could hit a 200 meter, 300 meter target with a rifle. But it was obvious that the target was small. When Grid used the sniper mode, it was up to a distance of 87 meters that the 'must hit' option was applied. If the distance was more than that, the target couldn't be seen easily and accuracy would fall, causing a warning window to pop up.

'The performance of the scope is garbage...'

The scope of the sniper model showed little zoom capability. Grid questioned whether this could be called a sniper rifle. But there was a fact that couldn't be overlooked. Satisfy's scientific power remained mostly in the Middle Ages. In Satisfy, guns weren't a produce of science of technology. They were a produce of engineering magic that the dwarves developed. Pagma didn't know how to produce a magic bayonet until he learned it from the dwarves.

'In addition, the sniper mode was an area that even the dwarves couldn't make.'

In the first place, Satisfy had the 'Hawk Eye' skill. It helped to broaden the field of view and to clearly identity distant targets. All the snipers in Satisfy had this skill. Strictly speaking, it was a time when the concept of a scope didn't even exist. The fact that Pagma created a scope in this day and age could be regarded as an amazing event. It was understandable that it would have a poor performance.

"Well, whatever."

Yura was a gunman and should have a vision skill, allowed her to maximize the abilities of the sniper rifle. She could snipe targets that were a few hundred meters

away. This was the real reason why Grid wasn't greedy for Alex's Magic Engineering Bayonet. It was the same for the Red Phoenix Bow. It was impossible for Grid to use the power of Alex's Magic Engineering Bayonet to 100% when he didn't have the Hawk Eye skill.

'There's no need to be misled. The aiming time is too long and the target has to be within 100 meters for instant death.'

He didn't need to be greedy. This was originally a weapon for a Demon Slayer. Giving it to Yura would benefit all of the Overgeared Kingdom. Grid didn't doubt it. He smiled cheerfully as he imagined a beautiful woman aiming at the enemy with a sniper rifle. The imaginary Yura looked strangely cute and charming.

"...Sigh."

Grid shook off his imagination. He felt he was pathetic for touching a tree that couldn't be climbed.

'I will just receive damage if I like someone.'

The incident with Ahyoung was the biggest trauma in Grid's life. Grid has no confidence in real world relationships. What about the women screaming his name when he went to Chinese restaurants? That's right. Grid thought the reason these women cheered was because they were pure fans. It was the only rational reason for women being nice to him. Who could imagine that a man who was a celebrity and had the potential to be one of the richest in the world would have such low confidence?

But it was the truth. Grid had received a big psychological blow. Of course, it was only in reality.

'It's okay, I have Irene.'

How lonely would he be without her? He was always thankful for the one who gave him love.

"..."

Grid thought of Irene's warm and kind eyes. His hands were moving non-stop while he was thinking. He cut the cloth with scissors and used thread and needle to turn it into the shape of underwear. Sticks was very embarrassed. A legendary blacksmith

and king of a nation was sitting down and making underwear with a sincere expression. Sticks felt that something was wrong. However, Grid wasn't self-conscious when doing his work.

'I have to raise the skill level and make underwear for all the soldiers.'

After acquiring the intermediate Underwear Production Method, Grid's underwear was given a defensive ability, even if it was normal rated. The defense was in the single digits and very minimal, but it was better than nothing. A single digit defense could save 10,000 or 20,000 lives!

'I don't need to make a lot of money... Okay. Let's keep making it. I'll be the manager of an underwear factory.'

The current Grid was focused on raising the skill level of his underwear production. The skill was only at intermediate level and the experience was steadily increasing, despite him not producing high rated items. Thus, he didn't use any special materials for the underwear. He used the cheapest materials. The cost of making the underwear was less than two silver. Of course, even a small amount would accumulate sooner or later. Even if it was two silver per piece, a lot of gold would be required in order to make it for 10,000 soldiers. Sage Sticks was concerned about this part.

"Your concern for the soldiers is great and deserves to be praised. But won't this be a considerable loss for the kingdom?"

Sticks was currently working for the Overgeared Kingdom. Lael and Rabbit asked him to teach at the academy as well as financial management. That's why he was talking about spending with Grid. Grid felt gratitude to the concerned Sticks and smiled.

"It's okay. I am using my own pockets."

"Huh..."

The king was financing the soldiers? Sticks was surprised by Grid's decision. Humans in high positions were often greedy. It was rare for a person like Grid, who didn't feel any greed, to appear. Grid explained.

"If I make underwear, the soldiers will like me more. Then they won't protest when I raise the taxes later. Right?"

“...I see.”

Indeed, humans weren't easy to judge. Sage Sticks felt enlightenment.

[The principal of the Overgeared Academy, Sage Sticks intelligence stat has increased by 10.]

[The principal of the Overgeared Academy, Sage Sticks has learnt the skills 'Human Vigilance' and 'Caution.']

“????”

What happened? Sticks bowed to Grid, who didn't know what was going on.

“Thank you.”

“ ... ”

Somehow, Grid felt a bit upset.

◇ ◇ ◇

"I feel it every time, but the comfort of the Comet Group's diamond class capsule is really great."

Even playing PC games on a small monitor stimulated the human peripheral nerves. Anyone who played PC games would experience the hand holding the mouse becoming covered in sweat. The excitement of virtual reality games, which was a much more immersive experience than PC games, was much greater.

Sweat flowed all over Shin Youngwoo as he got up from the capsule. If it wasn't for the diamond class capsule's ability to control the condition of the occupant, he would be sweating like a drowned rat. Youngwoo was excited from going against Death Knight Alex. Youngwoo was feeling expectant for the confrontation with the death knight on the 63rd island and the rewards he would get.

There was no fear. He was burning with motivation to win without the immortal skill.

"Let's wash up."

*Lululala~*

Youngwoo hummed as he headed to the bathroom, turning on the TV attached to the marbled wall of the bathroom. It was naturally fixed to a channel specializing in news about Satisfy.

『Do you remember the news a week ago where there was a rebellion within the Saharan Empire? Surprisingly, unlike the predictions of experts, the empire still hasn't subdued the rebels.』

The point of rebellion on the news screen was 'Lubana.' It coincided with the place that Lauel had mentioned.

'Right there...'

Grid was rubbing soap over his body when his hand suddenly stopped. The anchor's voice was continuing.

『It is interpreted that the person who is supposed to be Undefeated King Madra's opponent is playing a big role.』

"..."

Undefeated King Madra. The hero who defended Lubana from the empire during its heyday and boasted overwhelming defense. He had never been defeated and was called the Undefeated King. It was easy to deduce that he was a legend. Thus, Youngwoo was wary.

『We should pay attention to the identity of the Undefeated King's descendant. A player or an NPC? What new wind will they bring to Satisfy?』

The artificial intelligence of named NPCs was excellent. Better than most humans. Whether the Undefeated King's descendant was a NPC or player, it was clear they would have a big influence on the West Continent in the future. Just like right now. Their emergence allowed the Overgeared Kingdom and Valhalla to take a breath from the empire's pressure and made the empire's influence decrease.

‘The descendant of the Undefeated King is likely to be a player like me.’

Of course, there was a chance it could be an NPC. It was still impossible to speculate about their identity.

‘Anyway, it’s great.’

According to Ares, there was a tremendous gap between the empire’s solo number knights. The fifth knight was at the level of the current best players. Thus, the fifth knight was a bit better than Kraugel and Grid. The fourth knight was many times stronger and the third knight several times stronger than the fourth knight. Among them, the one considered to be the strongest...

‘The first knight.’

Mercedes. He had already met the young woman, whose name reminded Youngwoo of a luxury foreign car. He had felt it intuitively. She was a wall that couldn’t be overcome yet. The army she led had destroyed the Ares Army, yet they were now being defeated by the Undefeated King’s descendant.

‘Is it really an NPC?’

If the Undefeated King’s descendant was a player, they couldn’t afford to go against the empire yet.

‘In the first place, a player would have a very low level. If he just became a legend... No, wait.’

Just becoming a legend? There was no reason to think so. Youngwoo got goosebumps. The fact that Youngwoo and Kraugel became legends was only reported several months later. It was also due to unavoidable circumstances. Youngwoo revealed his identity while raiding the Yatan Servants and Kraugel revealed he was a legend while raiding the great demon.

‘Can a low level player stop the imperial army? If the Undefeated King’s descendant is a player, they might’ve obtained the legendary title a long time ago.’

*Shaaaaaaah-*

Youngwoo stood in the shower. He smiled as he saw the water flowing down his body.

‘An NPC or player is welcome.’

Really, there was no room to relax. Satisfy gave people constant irritation and vitalization. Youngwoo felt anxious, but delighted. His complicated emotions burned brightly. He would soon enter the 63rd island.



# Chapter 680

*Swaaaaah.*

A bridge connecting the sky and the land. The waterfall in the center of the 62nd cleansed island reached several thousand meters in height. It was difficult to gauge the scale of it and the power of the waterfall was great. Water splashed in every direction like rain seeping into the earth.

Sticks had a weak body and was uncomfortable with the cold water. However, Grid grew into a man who didn't fear sharp blades. He wasn't surprised at all by the deafening noise of the waterfall.

"Do you know in advance what the guardian of the next island is?"

There was a saying that knowledge of the enemy made you unbeatable. It would be difficult for Grid to win without relying on his immortality, so he wanted more information. He wanted to know in advance what the boss of the next island was and prepare for it.

Unfortunately, the next island was uncharted territory for Sticks. It was natural. In the first place, he was only able to reach the 60th island thanks to Grid.

"I can't jump to conclusions... I'm sorry that I can't help."

"Don't bow your head."

In the old days, Grid would've done more than grumble. A man of great wisdom. No, an elf, should be able to help him. But now Grid understood. He wasn't foolish enough to offend the other person because the work didn't go according to his will. He put himself in Sticks position. This action made Sticks put in a bit more effort. Sticks was deep in thought for a moment before opening his mouth.

"Previously, I ruled out Sword Saint Muller. It is also likely that Pagma, the creator of this Behen Archipelago, won't appear. Of course, Braham won't be present either."

It was natural. Braham's soul was currently with Grid. Still, Grid couldn't help feeling

relieved.

'I won't have an answer if Braham appeared as a lich.'

The death knights of the former legends could only use 'basic skills' and that was their weakness. But not for Braham. Braham's enhanced spells were powerful even at the lowest level of magic. It was clear that Lich Braham would have a very high level of difficulty, even if only basic magic was used.

'Braham, do you know that you are really great?'

*-Hmph, not all legends are the same. I was the most outstanding among the legends.*

Now Braham was in high spirits from a little praise. It was ridiculous when he was a professional troll. Grid stuck his tongue out at Braham without hesitation while Sticks analysis continued.

"Apart from those three, Lantier, and Alex, there are four legends left. The legendary archer Povia, the legendary tailor Kruger, the legendary miner Gis. And..."

It was said that there was a total of nine legends. Then who was the last one? Grid was now certain.

"Madra?"

"You already know."

It was as he expected. The identity of the ninth legend was the Undefeated King Madra, who overwhelmed the empire. He was the only king among the first legends.

"The four of them will appear sequentially on the remaining four islands."

It couldn't be predicted who would appear next. Yet Grid's heart had become relaxed.

"I can easily win against two of them."

They were the legendary miner Gis and the legendary tailor Kruger. Grid thought they were easy because they were production class legends. This was a mistake.

"...You are a blacksmith."

“...”

Pagma was a blacksmith and a great swordsman. Gis and Kruger would also have powerful abilities.

“It’s reasonable to think...”

Grid was filled with tension. When he looked back at himself and Pagma, he was sure that Gis and Kruger wouldn’t be easy opponents. The biggest problem was that he had no information about their fighting abilities. Sage Sticks’ knowledge helped him.

"Madra is a strategist who mastered martial arts. Gis is a tanker who demonstrated a rock-solid defensive ability based on his strong physical strength. And Kruger was famous for his killer needles."

“Hmmm...”

Grid tried to think. He first classified Povia and Gis as easier opponents.

'Archer Povia isn't as threatening. Once I narrow the distance to 200 meters, I can approach using Freely Move and then overpower the archer who has weak physical strength.'

A tanker was also easy to deal with.

'Tankers aren't aggressive... On the other hand, both my defense and attack power are high. I will win as long as I keep hitting Gis.'

On the other hand, he was likely to struggle against Madra.

'If Madra really mastered all martial arts, he would've learned a variety of swordsmanship. Most of his active skills from his prime are sealed, but he's still a threat because he has so many skills. In addition, he was a king. Based on the title of First King, he's likely to have a special survival passive.'

The most important target to watch out for was Madra. Then Kruger? He didn't know. He couldn't grasp anything from 'killer needles.' But Grid had Sticks. Grid once again relied on Sticks.

"What are killer needles?"

Sticks kindly explained to the questioning Grid.

"It's battle-specialized acupuncture that drives people to death. As a legendary tailor, Kruger is a master of sewing. He uses the needle very well. His technique of stabbing a needle precisely to overwhelm the opponent is extraordinary."

"Hrmmm..."

Martial arts came to mind. Acupuncture in martial arts was generally a versatile skill. They could kill or save the target with one thin needle. But Grid didn't take it as a threat.

'Doesn't it sound weak?'

There were clear limits to a needle weapon. It was too short. Grid could easily hit it with a sword. Furthermore.

'It's thin and will have less power.'

Grid's Triple Layers boasted a defensive ability that could prevent a knife. A thin and short needle couldn't penetrate Triple Layers. Grid grinned.

"In the end, they're all easy opponents except for Madra."

Grid wanted to meet Madra last. He thought it would be ideal to meet Madra after encountering easier opponents first, gaining their items and becoming stronger.

[The cooldown time of immortality is over.]

Then a notification window popped up. Grid stepped towards the bridge leading to the next island and waved at Sticks.

"Then I'll see you on the next island."

"I will support you."

Sticks felt something strange as he saw Grid's confident figure. But he didn't express it. He trusted Grid's skills. In the meantime, Grid crossed the bridge and entered the gate.

*Paaaat!*

Grid's figure disappeared. He entered the 63rd island.

◇ ◇ ◇

[You have entered the 63rd island.]

'Who is it?'

Povia, Madra, Gis, and Kruger. Which of the remaining four legends would be guarding the 63rd island? Grid was first on the lookout for sniping. The God Hands spread out and found the sniping locations. It was an act that assumed the opponent was Povia. But no arrows flew after dozens of seconds. The likelihood of the 63rd island's guardian being Povia was significantly lowered.

'Unlike Lantier and Alex, they aren't appearing immediately... '

Grid guessed that the guardian of the 63rd island was likely to be Gis or Kruger. They were relatively weak, so Grid thought they wouldn't act carelessly. At that moment.

"Legendary Tailor's Eye."

"...?!"

A chill went down Grid's spine. It was because he heard the distinctive voice of a death knight from a rock behind him. The voice sounded like it was speaking in a big cave.

"God Hands!"

Grid drew the God Hands closer in anticipation of an attack. He grabbed the Enlightenment Blade and planned to counterattack, but the death knight just stared down at him. The death knight's name was Kruger. The legendary tailor who created the invisibility cloak. He looked at Grid and said something again.

"Legendary Tailor's Eye."

“...!”

Grid clearly heard Kruger’s words and became alert. If the Legendary Tailor’s Eye was similar to the Legendary Blacksmith’s Eye, Kruger was now checking his item information. It was a chance to expose a weak point. Grid couldn’t give Kruger a chance to observe him. In the first place, he thought of Kruger as an easy opponent.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Transcended Link!”

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

The storm of blades aimed directly at Kruger on the rock! Grid thought that Kruger wouldn’t be able to protect himself since he was busy observing Grid’s items. While Kruger was suffering great damage, he planned to climb onto the rock and link the next attack. However.

*Swaeeeeek!*

A sharp needle aimed at Grid’s brow as he was jumping towards the rock. It was a needle that had flown from the explosion generated by Transcended Link. There also wasn’t a message window indicating that Kruger suffered damage.

‘He avoided or blocked Transcended Link?’

Grid couldn’t understand it but he kept his composure. He avoided the needle that was less than five centimeters in length and succeeded in climbing up the rock. Then he was surprised.

‘No?’

Gone! Kruger had disappeared from the rock. Grid was the only one present on the rock.

‘What is going on?’

Grid was looking around with confusion when he heard Braham’s voice.

*-Use Magic Detection.*

It was the same advice as when Lantier was hiding. Grid realized.

‘Invisibility cloak!’

Yes, this was the legendary tailor Kruger. Just like the legendary blacksmith Grid was overgeared, Kruger would also be overgeared.

*Puok!*

Grid was urgently trying to use Magic Detection when a shock hit his side. A needle from the hidden Kruger had pierced Grid. But.

[You have suffered 430 damage.]

Indeed, a needle was a needle. It failed to pierce Triple Layers. The impact of the sting was very slight and the actual damage was extremely low.

“Is this a joke?”

Grid snorted and started the sword dance for Wave. It was necessary to use a wide area skill to attack the invisible Kruger and then he would use Magic Detection during that time. But he failed.

[Kruger’s acupuncture needle has reversed your mana flow.]

[You can’t resist.]

[Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Wave has failed.]

[Your health will suffer three times the mana that was consumed by the failure.]

[You have suffered 2,400 damage.]

“...?!”

The strongest debuffer. That was the reality of Kruger. Grid felt goosebumps on his skin and hurriedly moved. Meanwhile, Kruger had taken off the invisibility cloak and revealed his appearance. The death knight was holding three needles in every finger joint. He looked like a lich in his robe.

“Legendary Tailor’s Eye.”

*Pahat!*

Kruger used the same skill again. A violet light glowed as he contemplated Grid. He felt naked as detailed information about his items was sent to Kruger.

“This bastard!”

Grid felt uncomfortable and attacked Kruger. Kruger’s needle causing mana reflux was a one time effect so Grid could now use skills without any penalty. He used Link without hesitation. At that moment.

*Paaaat!*

A translucent circle was created in a 10 meter radius around Kraugel and Grid’s Link hit it directly.

*Tteteong!*

*Tteteteteong!*

“.....?!”

It didn’t move? Kruger’s barrier held firmly despite being hit by Link. It didn’t shake at all, no matter how many times the black flames exploded. Grid was confused.

‘What is this ridiculous defense technique?’

It was a misunderstanding. This wasn’t a skill used by Kruger but a system effect. Grid quickly realized this.

[For the next 10 minutes, the legendary tailor Kruger will make an item!]



“...Eh?”

Inside the ward. The squatting death knight pulled out a cloth and started sewing it with a needle. It was a funny picture.

“???????”

Question marks appeared over Grid’s head.

# Chapter 681

*Jjang!*

*Jjeejeeong!*

No matter how many times he tried, the result was the same. Grid's attack didn't make a scratch on the barrier. The system's privacy was absolute.

'Sheesh, why am I not invincible when making an item?'

He didn't have anything like this when using Item Combination. It was discrimination that made people dissatisfied. Item Combination was even from a hidden piece!

'It's too much.'

Grid glared at Kruger inside the barrier. Kruger squatted on the ground and was cutting cloth with tools such as scissors, chisels, and knives. A large cloth was divided into specific forms and then sewn together. A skeleton squatting down and sewing...

Was there such a great comedy? Anyone else would look at Death Knight Kruger and laugh. But Grid didn't laugh. His expression gradually stiffened.

'He can cut cloth so quickly and precisely with a bony hand... '

Grid's admiration was huge. It was the aftermath of acquiring the intermediate Tailoring skill. Grid knew something about tailoring, even if he wasn't a tailor. Thanks to this, he could see Kruger's great ability.

'He can sew so many different types of fabrics together without making it seem like it... This is the legendary tailoring technique... '

Grid's tailoring ability was naturally lacking. He couldn't use various types of cloth when making one item. He had to concentrate on only two types of fabrics when producing items, as well as retain the characteristics of the fabric in order to produce plausible results.

‘It’s a bit too much to sell.’

Most of Grid’s cloth items didn’t have a good performance. They were a bit better than the items sold at the usual village stores. This was the power of dexterity. Grid still had a long way to go when it came to tailoring itself.

‘In the first place, I don’t want to be a tailor... Well, whatever.’

Now wasn’t the time to be thinking of these things. Grid shook his head and cleared his mind.

‘I need to focus on the fight. I will win this fight.’

Why was Kruger making items during combat? It was easy to deduce. Kruger analyzed Grid’s items using the Legendary Tailor’s Eye skill and was making a new item to counter them. This was certainly an amazing ability. Kruger had the ability to make items in real time to weaken his opponent’s strength and lead the battle in a favorable way.

‘But this time, he met the wrong opponent.’

Grid smiled confidently and put the Enlightenment Blade back in his inventory. The weapon he pulled out was Alex’s Magic Engineering Bayonet.

‘While you are making an item...’

*Clink! Clink clink!*

The magic bayonet started to change. It became a one meter long sniper rifle with a rough scope. The smooth ivory beauty of the gun barrel seemed to capture the hearts of others. Grid grasped it with both hands. The item making Kruger was 80 meters away.

That’s right. Grid was going to utilized the ‘fixed instant death’ function attached to the sniper mode of the magic engineering bayonet. At a distance of 80 meters, Grid had to spend two minutes aiming. But time wasn’t a penalty for him right now. Kruger was involved in making an item so he had enough time.

‘Kruger, it is over the moment you finish.’

Grid leaned forward and targeted Kruger. His act of breathing was skillful. There was no shaking as the South Korean army man aimed at Kruger's head.

'I will end it in one blow.'

*Kkuok!*

Grid's long, thick finger was fixed on the trigger. Kruger squatted in the transparent barrier and was still making an item. He never imagined that Grid would snipe him in a few minutes. At the same time, the 62nd island.

"He misjudged...!"

Sticks was alarmed as he watched Grid in the crystal ball. It was because Grid misunderstood the concept of instant death when it came to the undead.

"A death knight doesn't experience instant death...!"

Instantaneous death techniques act by counterattacking an enemy's life.' In other words, it was a power that acted absolutely on a living being. And the undead were dead. There was no life force to wipe out so the instant death was nullified. Grid shouldn't have forgotten this fact. He was someone who was protected from death because he had the 'immortal' skill. It was silly for him to forget the concept of the undead.

'No, isn't it unavoidable?'

Sticks was regretting Grid's stupidity, only to realize Grid's position. In the era that Grid was living in, peace had been maintained for hundreds of years thanks to the performance and sacrifice of the former legends. Humans developed and monsters didn't thrive. In particular, undead were monsters that couldn't exist if there were no corpses. Thus, their appearance was thoroughly prevented.

In other words, it was a lack of experience. Grid didn't know about the undead. He had also never used an instant death skill, one of the greatest techniques in history.

'Then he'll have to drink a bitter cup...!'

*Taaang!*

In the crystal ball. Grid fired the moment the barrier was lifted from Kruger. Sticks thought that Grid would be in a great crisis. Death Knight Kruger would resist the instant death and hit Grid with a deadly counterattack. It turned out like he expected.

*Puok!*

Kruger charged through the bullet from the sniper rifle, threw a needle at Grid and Grid allowed it. He was facing a crisis. Sticks cheered Grid on.

“Overcome it...! This is a costly price for learning, but if you keep your concentration...!”

◇ ◇ ◇

[Shooting the target!]

*Peeeeeeong!*

The sniper rifle roared and shot a bullet.

“Ugh...!”

Grid gritted his teeth. It was due to the large recoil, despite the fact that he was on the ground and his body position was firm. Yura’s strength was much lower than Grid and she was likely to get dislocated from using this sniper rifle.

*Peeeeeeong!*

Immediately after completing the item. The Kruger running to Grid was pierced by a mana bullet. Grid had consumed a huge 2,000 mana for that bullet. Grid naturally thought that Kruger would die.

*Kiyaaaaaaaah!*

"What?"

Kruger was fine. Despite there being a hole in the center of the skull, not one point of the health gauge had been consumed and Kruger kept rushing to Grid.

“Damn!”

The confused Grid hurriedly swapped his weapon. He recalled the sniper rifle to his inventory and pulled out the Enlightenment Blade. Kruger reached Grid and fired dozens of needles.

*Chaeng!*

*Chaeeeeeng!*

Grid used Quick Movements to evade the needles.

*Puk! Puuooooook!*

However, Kruger acted promptly in this gap. He approached and stabbed Grid’s chest directly with a needle.

[You have suffered 1,570 damage.]

[You have been stabbed in a blood vessel. Your blood flow isn’t smooth. Health recovery is blocked for 20 seconds.]

[You can’t resist.]

[You have suffered 1,390 damage.]

[An abnormality has occurred in your joints. Your left arm is paralyzed for the next 13 seconds.]

[You can’t resist.]

[You have suffered 1,642 damage.]

[There is a reflux of mana. Use skills with caution.]

[You can’t resist.]

“Crazy!”

It was the moment when Grid witnessed the proper use of dexterity. Kruger used his thousands of dexterity to precisely aim for the gaps between Triple Layers, causing critical damage to Grid. Not only did he suffer more damage than when his armor was stabbed, he also suffered from various conditions. But Grid was calm.

“Magic Missile!”

[You have failed to activate Magic Missile.]

[Your health will suffer three times the mana that was consumed by the failure.]

Grid made a very smart judgment. Kruger’s needle prevented the one-time use of a skill, so Grid minimized the damage by using a skill that consumed the least mana. While Quick Movements was maintained, he focused on avoiding Kruger’s needles and started the sword dance of Pagma’s Swordsmanship. It was Link.

*Pit!*

*Pipipipipit!*

Kruger couldn’t respond. It was because at least 20 energy blades were fired at him.

*Kwa kwang!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

The speed of the energy blades gave the illusion that the flow of time had stopped. As Sticks watched in the crystal ball, the power of Link was combined with the Enlightenment Blade. Black flames erupted a total of nine times with Kruger in the centre.

‘Good!’

Grid didn’t doubt his victory. He prepared to put an end to Kruger by continuing this

offensive. But that resolution lasted for only a moment. Grid was shocked when he saw the successive notification windows in front of him.

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 30% additional fire damage to the target!]

[The target has neutralized the flames.]

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has added 5,000 fire damage!]

[The target has neutralized the flames.]

[The option effect of the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 30% additional dark damage to the target!]

[The target has maximized the darkness. The target's dark attribute damage will increase by 10%.]

[Darkness is the power of the undead.]

[The target has recovered 98,500 health.]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[The target has failed to neutralize the black flames.]

[You have dealt 667,940 damage to the target!]

"This bastard!"

Link dealt much less damage to Kruger than Grid expected. It was due to the power of the cloth item that Kruger made for 10 minutes. Kruger had weakened the power of the Enlightenment Blade by wearing cloth that maximized the dark attribute and blocked the fire attribute.



It was admirable that he could maximize the dark attribute that was an advantage to him while blocking the flames. He might be a death knight, but named NPCs had very high intelligence. Fortunately, the black flames were an independent attribute that didn't belong to either the darkness or fire attribute. Kruger couldn't block the black flames and suffered great damage.

*Kik.*

*Kkikikikik!*

The joints of Kruger's right leg were broken by the explosion. Kruger fired a few needles at Grid and retreated. Then a barrier was once again unfolded. He wanted to create a new item!

"Again!"

Grid trembled.

He needed to keep up his flow of concentration in battle so it was annoying that it kept being interrupted. He was once again convinced of the wicked personality of the Satisfy creators.

[For the next 20 minutes, the legendary tailor Kruger will make an item!]

"An additional 10 minutes?"

Grid was shocked by Kruger's ability to make items and disable the instant death. His mental shock was doubled at the thought of having to wait here for another 20 minutes. On the other hand, Sticks watched the crystal ball and prayed earnestly.

"Grid, you have to defeat Kruger in order to cleanse the 63rd island. If this keeps repeating, Kruger will become stronger than you and your odds will disappear."

Please, please. He hoped that Grid would discover this fact. Sticks desperately wanted his heart to reach Grid, but it didn't. Grid wasn't even thinking about this. Just.

"Yes, I will do the same."

".....!!"

Sticks' eyes widened. It was because in the crystal ball, Grid was taking out a portable furnace and blacksmithing hammer.

"T-This method...!"

An eye for an eye! This was it! Confront item making by making an item! Sticks admired Grid's idea and determination.

# Chapter 682

"T-This method...!"

Grid intended to respond to item production with item production! Sticks felt admiration at the unexpected idea. It was exciting to see Grid overturn the common sense of a sage every time. But.

'Going against common sense isn't always a good thing. This isn't a smart method!'

Sticks was certain of it. No matter how he thought about it, the method to win against Kruger was to break the barrier. Kruger's ability to make items was essentially blocked if the barrier was eliminated. Kruger wouldn't be able to deal deadly injuries to Grid with his needles alone and it was likely that Grid would catch him as time passed. Yes, all he had to do was break the barrier.

But Grid wasn't even thinking about this. It was natural. Grid believed that Kruger was in an area that couldn't be touched since he realized that Kruger was the recipient of the system. It wasn't a hasty judgment. The system was absolute. Most players, not just Grid, wouldn't have thought about breaking Kruger's barrier. The more items Kruger made, the stronger he became. Eventually the player would fail to capture the 63rd island.

That's right. The difficulty of the 63rd island was very high. Kruger was a much more demanding boss monster than Lantier and Alex, who only pushed him physically. Just like he succeeded in the Hell Gao raid by obtaining the fire stones, Kruger was a raid that would only succeed if he found the right hints.

But Grid's thoughts were completely different.

'He's an easy opponent.'

It wasn't false confidence. From Grid's perspective, Kruger was really an easy opponent. Why? Grid had the ultimate magic, the enhanced versions of Alarm and Magic Missile. It was fortunate for Grid that Kruger spent 10 minutes and 20 minutes making items.

This was after the Belial raid. Grid cleared several class quests in a row and raised his level significantly in the process of killing the armoured elite troops of the Belto Kingdom. This time, he cleared the 62nd island and gained another level. Now his level was 348. His total intelligence was 2,260. His pure mana was 13,560. If his intelligence was applied, his mana was close to 20,000. It was a large source for magic.

‘The cooldown time of Alarm Lv. 3 is 15 seconds.’

Of course, this was the story when adding up the items that reduced skill cooldown. Theoretically, Grid was able to prepare 80 Alarm + Magic Missiles in 20 minutes. It would be possible if he freely took the best mana potions supplied from Reidan’s alchemy facility.

Once Kruger finished making the items? The barrier would fall and he would be hit by a fatal bombardment of Magic Missiles. Yes, Grid was confident that he could defeat Kruger at any time. Therefore, he could take risks and challenge new things.

‘Making an item!’

Grid was also a legend. If Kruger could produce items in 10 minutes and 20 minutes, Grid could as well. Grid wanted to experiment.

‘I learned from the 2nd National Competition. I spend a few days working on items while other blacksmiths only spend minutes or hours.’

At first, Grid was very surprised and thought negatively. He made fun of other blacksmiths as he wondered how items produced in a short amount of time be meaningful. But what was the reality? Most of the top ranking blacksmiths succeeded in making items with superior power.

At this moment, Grid realized. Spending a long time didn’t necessarily mean a good item would be born.

‘It is an X probability game.’

The result of making a good item depended on probability, not time. Of course, the more time spend creating items, the more likely a higher rated item was to be produced.

‘But the probability will be similar to making several items in a short amount of time.’

In fact, Grid produced the mass production set in as little time as possible and made a lot of rare and epic items.

‘I can’t deny that spending a lot of time in combat is useful.’

Grid knew that it took a lot of time to produce the ultimate items. But he didn’t deny the fast production of items like factories.

‘Sometimes I need the ability to quickly produce items.’

The items wouldn’t unconditionally be bad just because it was made quickly. Kruger proved that fact right now. Thus, Grid would also challenge it.

"Me too..."

*Kkuok!*

Grid put white phosphorus wood in the portable furnace. He held his blacksmith’s hammer while waiting for the temperature of the furnace to rise.

“I will become a factory manager too...!”

Too much craftsmanship could sometimes be a weakness grabbing at his ankle. He would overcome it and advance. Grid pledged to shake off the craftsmanship that was deeply rooted.

[Kruger has 18 minutes remaining.]

The temperature of Grid’s portable furnace rose very quickly. As Kruger cut two fabrics, the flames in the furnace had already reached the desire temperature. The Legendary Blacksmith’s Craftsmanship Skill was very versatile and Grid was even an expert with the bellows.

“I will make an item!”

He would make an item in 18 minutes. An item that would demonstrate its usefulness

right now. What was it? Grid had already thought about it. Based on his experience of making many items, Grid was quick-witted when it came to big work.

"I will make a weapon that crushes all of Kruger's bones!"

Grid was excited to compete with a legendary tailor. He shouted as hard as possible and took a red bead out of his inventory. It was from his distant newbie days. It was the Red Lightning Summoning Bead that he obtained after raiding the frostlight orc chief.

[Red Lightning Summoning Bead]

The power of a frostlight orc shaman dwells in this bead.

Can summon red lightning from the sky. Temporarily increases the attack power of the weapon struck by this lightning bolt and gives the weapon an electrical attribute.

\* It takes one minute to summon the lightning bolt, and the summoner's health will drop by 10% after each summoning.

Weight: 50

"It's been a while."

Grid hadn't forgotten about this summoning bead. As the enemies became stronger, he avoided using it because the burden of the time it took to summon the lightning bolt was too long. He thought that the penalty was higher than the performance.

The Red Lightning Summoning Bead increased the weapon's attack power by 10%, not his total attack power. He didn't want to lose 10% of his health for a one minute buff. But Grid had been thinking about it. What if this summoning bead was permanently attached to a weapon? For example, it could be used as an item making material.

However, it was an unrealistic assumption. It was because the Red Lightning Summoning Bead wasn't classified as a 'production material.' In the past, Grid found

it impossible to make an item based on the Red Lightning Summoning Bead. But now Grid had the Item Reconstruction skill.

From the moment he could this skill, he thought about using it on the Red Lightning Summoning Bead. Grid decided that now was the right time to use the Red Lightning Summoning Bead.

‘The undead are weak against explosions.’

An explosion occurred at the point where the red lightning struck. If he could attach the Red Lightning Summoning Bead to the Enlightenment Blade, it was highly likely that the Enlightenment Blade would become a weapon that could deal deadly damage to the undead.

In particular, Kruger was only watching out for the flames of the Enlightenment Blade. Kruger would have no defense against the lightning attribute because the current Enlightenment Blade didn’t have it. What if the lightning power of the Red Lightning Summoning Bead was granted to the Enlightenment Sword at this time?

‘I will be able to hit Kruger in the back of the head.’

A smile spread on Grid’s face as he checked the skill information window.

[Legendary Blacksmith’s Reconstruction Lv. 1]

Current experience 63.2%.

Reinterpret items with a 100% understanding into a new form.

The performance of the modified item will depend on your interpretation, skill, and intentions.

\* An item can only be reconstructed once.

\* When the skill level increases, the number of reconstructions will increase by one.

The requirements were met. The Enlightenment Sword was made by Grid so his understanding was already 100%. One thing to watch out for was that he could only reconstruct an item one time.

‘I need to be careful.’

Grid thought once again. Was it enough to attach the Red Lightning Summoning Bead to the Enlightenment Blade? Of course it was sufficient. There was the black flames of the Enlightenment Blade. It was worth investing the Red Lightning Summoning Bead as well.

‘In addition, the skill will reach level two sooner or later.’

The number of possible reconstructions would increase. There was no reason to hesitate. Grid separated the Enlightenment Blade from Sword Ghost and threw it into the furnace without hesitation. He added the Red Lightning Summoning Bead.

*Peeeeeeong!*

A powerful explosion took place in the furnace. The flames from the Enlightenment Blade and the lightning from the Red Lightning Summoning Bead caused the earth to shake.

*Clack.*

*Claack.*

Kruger turned his gaze to Grid while cutting the cloth. If Kruger was alive, he would’ve become alert to the fact that Grid was making an item, which could be a variable. However, the current Kruger was a death knight. He had no thoughts. He soon became indifferent to Grid and turned his gaze back to the cloth. Then.

*Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!*

The 63rd island.

A hammering sound started to ring on the quiet island. Grid pulled out the Enlightenment Blade and the Red Lightning Summoning Bead before they lost their shape and started hammering frantically.



‘The time it took me to modify Lifael’s Spear isn’t much different from when I make a new item.’

However, now he realized that he spent too much time when looking at Kruger. In the first place, Item Reconstruction was a very active skill. The more it was used in real time during battle, the more valuable it was.

‘I have to aim to be a factory manager and finish it in an instant!’

The 18 minutes flew by quickly.

*Paaaat!*

The barrier around Kruger disappeared without a trace.

[Kruger has finished making the item!]

Then a notification window popped up.

*Taack!*

Kruger was already moving. Just like Grid had most of his health and mana restored while hammering and the skill cooldown time ended, Kruger also had most of his health gauge filled.

“What did he make this time?”

*Ttang!*

Grid hit the blade that was blinking red on the anvil one last time. As the God Hands blocked a few attacks from Kruger, Grid used Pagma’s Swordsmanship.

“Link.”

*Pajik!*

The blade flashed red. It was the Enlightenment Sword. But now it was different. Sparks rose every time it blinked red.

*Pit!*

*Pipipipipit!*

“...!”

*Kwang!*

*Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

Kruger was engulfed in a storm of red light. The cloth he wrapped around himself blocked the flames, absorbed the dark energy and allowed part of the black flames.

*Jjeejeeong!*

A red lightning bolt struck.

*Duk!*

*Duduk!*

Kruger's bones shook from the electric shock. It was the moment when the legend of the previous generation was overwhelmed by the present legend. The former legends were weak because they weren't intact? No, that wasn't it. Grid wasn't perfect as a legend. Don't forget that the legends of the present day weren't mature. Simply, the new generation was better.

# Chapter 683

[Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires]

Rating: Myth

Durability: 1,660/1,660 Attack Power: 3,780

- \* 20% increase in physical attack power.
- \* 20% increase in magic attack power.
- \* 30% bonus fire attribute damage.
- \* 30% bonus dark attribute damage.
- \* 15% bonus lightning attribute damage.
- \* Deals an additional 50% damage to sacred beings.
- \* There is a certain probability of flames (large) being released when attacking.
- \* There is a low probability of illusions being released when attacking.
- \* There is a low probability of summoning a red lightning bolt when attacking.
- ★ There is a certain probability of a black flames explosion when attacking.

...

...

...

The Red Lightning Summoning Bead combined with the Enlightenment Blade! The base damage of the weapon was increased by 8%, there was additional lightning damage and an option to summon a red lightning bolt. There was no decrease in health

penalty!

In addition, the red lightning bolt boasted superior power to general lightning. The damage was calculated in proportion to the total attack power and the probability of causing electric shock was also high. But the real strength of the red lightning bolt was separate.

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 30% additional fire damage to the target!]

[The target has neutralized the flames.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has added 5,000 fire damage!]

[The target has neutralized the flames.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 30% additional dark damage to the target!]

[The target has maximized the darkness. The target's dark attribute damage will increase by 10%.]

[Darkness is the power of the undead.]

[The target has recovered 83,200 health.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 15% additional lightning damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 41,900 damage to the target!]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has summoned a red lightning bolt!]

*Kwajik!*

The difference was that the red lightning bolt was summoned from the sky. Unless the enemy had eyes on the top of the head, the enemy targeted by the Enlightenment Blade wouldn't be able to cope with the red lightning.

*Kwarururung!*

A red lightning bolt crossed the grey sky.

*Kuwaaaang!*

It fell towards lightning rod Death Knight Kruger on the ground!

“...!!”

A light flashed in Kruger's eye sockets as part of his bones cracked. It was the aftermath of the powerful explosion.

[You have dealt 195,600 damage to the target!]

[The target is caught in an electric shock for 1.2 seconds!]

‘Good!’

The red lightning struck in a narrow range. It only damaged a single target. In addition, the probability of it appearing was only ‘low.’ But it was better than nothing. No, it was a thousand times better. Since it was a skill attached to a myth rated weapon, there was no resource consumption and the strength was around 40% of the black flames.

*Pajjik!*

*Clack! Clack clack!*

Death Knight Kruger flinched as he was wrapped in sparks. It was the effects of the electric shock. From this point, the God Hands started their rampage with Mjolnir.

*Peok!*

*Peok peok peok!*

[God Hand (1) has dealt 3,110 damage to the target.]

[The Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir has caused the target to stiffen for 0.3 seconds.]

[God Hand (2) has dealt 2,030 damage to the target.]

[The +7 Mjolnir (2) has caused the target to stiffen for 0.1 seconds.]

[The God Hand (4)...

[The +7 Mjolnir (4)...

...

...

A snowball effect that started from the one second of electric shock! Kruger was incapacitated. He wasn't able to block the golden hammers constantly attacking his skull. It was the moment when Grid grabbed his victory.

"God Hands! It has been a long time since you've done this!"

The God Hands' first and foremost role was to protect their master. Grid's safety was the priority no matter the circumstances. It was almost impossible for Grid to suppress the basic attribute despite ordering them to 'attack the target.' While the God Hands were attacking the target, they were ready to switch to protecting Grid if he was attacked.

This was a strength and weakness. Of course, this weakness could be overcome if Grid continued to command the God Hands in real time. But was it that easy? It was difficult to constantly renew the commands to the God Hands while dealing with the enemy in front of his eyes.

This was why the combination of God Hands and Mjolnir couldn't be used properly in every raid. But that weakness was overcome at this moment. Thanks to the Red Lightning Summoning Bead attached to the Enlightenment Blade!

*Puk!*

*Puk puk!*

Grid was able to attack at least two times per second with the option effect of the Quick Gloves. He continued to beat up the rigid Kruger. He didn't take a break at all. Together with Mjolnir, he bombarded Kruger with sword attacks. Then.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

*Kuoooooh!*

He tried a combo. After a basic attack, he cancelled the recovery action and immediately linked a skill. It omitted some motions, making it possible for him to link skills and basic attacks faster. A large number of players did this skillfully, but Grid wasn't familiar with it. It was the limit of Pagma's Swordsmanship rather than Grid's individual talent. Pagma's Swordsmanship was difficult to mix basic attacks in because the skill development motion was too long. However, this weakness was overcome with Alex's Quick Gloves.

*Cheook!*

One step.

*Puok!*

A flurry of basic attacks.

*Cheook!*

Another step.

*Puok!*

Another flurry of basic attacks. Grid mixed in his basic attacks between the steps of Pagma's Swordsmanship. This was possible thanks to the faster attack speed. The best part was something else.

[Alex's Quick Gloves have been released.]

[You have equipped the +8 Holy Light Gloves.]

Due to the target being stiffened, there was time for Grid to swap items. Once he used a skill, he could take off Alex's Quick Gloves which weren't effective and use the Holy Light Gloves.

"Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle."

*Kuoooooooooh!*

He had managed to overwhelm Yatan's Servant Malacus in his beginning days with the separate skills. Even Death Knight Kruger felt an instinctive crisis.

*Clack!*

*Clack clack!*

Kruger struggled as he was hit. He wanted to move, but couldn't get away from the God Hands constantly hitting him. Infinite stiffness. It was a fraudulent technique that could be mistaken as a bug if activated properly.

*Pit!*

*Pipipipipit!*

The energy blades raged.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeng!*

Flames and black flames exploded in succession. After that.

*Kurururung!*

Red lightning fell from the sky and struck Kruger's skull.



*Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!*

[You have dealt 132,790 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 145,840 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 170,900 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 188,050 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt...]

...

...

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title 'Death in One Shot!' has been activated, adding 30% critical damage!]

[You have dealt 926,430 damage to the target!]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

...

...

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has summoned a red lightning bolt!]

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title 'Death in One Shot!' has been...]

[The +8 Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be.....]

...

...

[You have dealt 3,235,900 damage to the target.]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[You have dealt...]

...

...

“Kiyaaaaah!”

In the ensuing explosion and lightning strikes, Kruger's voice filled the sky. It was a roar of anger, not pain. It was because he couldn't feel pain. However, Grid's attack wasn't over. This was only the Link part of Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle. The real attack started now.

*Puk.*

*Puk puk! Puuooook!*

The energy blades aiming at Kruger changed their orbits, this time moving in a straight line. Kruger was pierced by it and his purple light turned grey. It seemed that all activities stopped for a while due to the excessive impact.

[You have dealt 310,100 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 343,000 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 379,300 damage to the target...]

...

...

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title 'Death in One Shot!' has been...]

[You have dealt 1,102,500 damage to the target.]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has summoned a red lightning bolt!]

*Kwarung!*

*Kwarururung!*

A natural disaster wouldn't be as hard as this. The endlessly swirling attacks struck Kruger. Grid felt sympathy since this was also a person who fought for the world as a legend.

"Ah... Ahhh..."

*Duguen! Duguen!*

Sticks was pale as he watched through the crystal ball. He was amazed beyond admiration at Grid's absurd aggressiveness. He was so surprised that he could feel a pain in his weak heart. Grid's strikes continued. The storm of death turned Kruger into rags and then Pinnacle descended. A powerful blow!

*Jjejejeok!*

Kruger's skull was heavily cracked. As soon as Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle was completed, Grid replaced the Holy Light Gloves with Alex's Quick Gloves and immediately started hitting Kruger with basic attacks.

'He is really durable.'

Kruger still had 30% of his health remaining. Grid grumbled, but a named boss had lost 70% of his health from one skill. It was truly shocking. It meant that Grid's attack power was outside a player's range and was on the level of a catastrophe.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

Grid prepared the final blow. After a basic attack, he swapped the Quick Gloves to the Holy Light Gloves. Then.

"Linked Kill!"

*Puk.*

*Puk puk puk!*

Grid stabbed Death Knight Kruger again! The 5th strike wasn't a critical and it felt somewhat lacking, but he didn't try transforming the God Hands into Lifael's Spear. It was because the moment a Mjolnir was lost, Kruger might escape from the infinite stiffness and fight back. It was a very wise decision.

'There is no need to fret.'

The prey was already caught so there was no need to worry about finishing the battle quickly. The key was keeping the infinite stiffness. Grid thought this and after Linked Kill, he used Transcended Link, Pinnacle Kill, and Link. He was able to trigger two Pinnacle Kills thanks to God's Command activating.

In the end.

*Kurururu!*

It took 10 minutes but Kruger, the guardian of the 63rd island was killed. He wasn't able to use the unknown item that he spent 20 minutes making. It was because he was weak to status conditions, becoming good prey for the God Hands and Mjolnir

combination.

[You have defeated Death Knight Kruger, guardian of the 63rd island!]

[The 63rd island has been cleansed!]

[As a reward for cleansing the island, you have gained one level!]

[You have acquired Kruger's tailoring tools!]

[You have acquired Kruger's Mysterious Cloth!]

# Chapter 684

“The gloves are really great...”

After the battle was over.

Grid recreated the battle before checking the items that Kruger had dropped. If there was a part to praise about himself, there was also a part to criticize. This would be used as a stepping stone to mature one step further. In the process, the most noteworthy part for Grid was his items. He noticed the Holy Light Gloves and Alex's Quick Gloves more than the Enlightenment Lightning Sword and Mjolnir.

‘There is the lottery option of the Holy Light Gloves that I’ve always relied on.’

Now he realized that Alex's Quick Gloves were amazing.

The speed of his basic attacks had doubled so his continuous damage rose sharply. The attack power of each basic attack increased and combined with the power of the Enlightenment Blade, his basic attacks had been maximized beyond expectations. The damage was even better than the Holy Light Gloves.

‘It will be more effective as my agility increases.’

Every 1,000 agility increase general attack speed by 0.1. Grid’s current agility was 2,876. He could achieve a base attack speed of 0.8 and if he wore Alex’s Quick Gloves, it would be 0.4. It was possible to do two basic attacks per second and five per two seconds.

‘If my basic speed is at 0.7...’

The Quick Gloves will make it 0.35 attack speed and almost three attacks per second. Grid’s original goal was to obtain a ratio of 1:1 for strength and agility. Grid decided he didn’t need to hesitate and opened his status window.

“Status Window!”

Name: Grid

Level: 349

Class: Pagma's Descendant (Conditional Great Magician)

Title: One who Became a Legend and 22 others. (If you want to view the list, please click for a detailed view.)

Health: 88,175 Mana: 13,602

Strength: 3,140 (+360)

Stamina: 1,967 (+580)

Agility: 2,546 (+330)

Intelligence: 1,727 (+540)

Dexterity: 3,507 (+880)

Persistence: 1,452 (+330)

Composure: 1,058 (+330)

Indomitable: 1,313 (+440)

Dignity: 1,966 (+330)

Insight: 1,806 (+330)

Courage: 1,002 (+330)

Demonic Power: 13,402

Good Luck: 241

Deity: 3

Remaining Stat Points: 300

Grid acquired 12 stat points per level since becoming one with Braham's soul. Then the title of First King gave him 14 stat points per level. Since recently, he had accumulated two and then four points more than others. However, half of the points were forcibly invested in intelligence. Therefore, even if Grid had been accumulating his points since level 301, he only had 300 stat points.

'Nevertheless, I don't see it as a loss. Intelligence is a stat that I need after all... That's right... It isn't a loss... '

Grid tried to comfort himself.

*Shake shake.*

In the end, he failed and started distributing the stat points.

'Points in agility.'

[124 points will be invested in agility. Have you decided?]

"Yes."

[It has been applied.]

[Your agility has increased by 124.]

[Your agility stat is now at 2,546 points.]

[Through the combined effects of various titles, 3,000 agility has been achieved.]

[Your base attack speed has increased by 0.1.]

[Movement speed has increased by 30.]



“Good.”

He finally achieved 3,000 agility. Grid tested it immediately.

*Syuok!*

*Syuok!*

Six attacks in two seconds! Some people might have questions. In reality, a high quality professional boxer could attack four times per second. Was attacking three times per second in the game really that great? Of course it was. Grid wasn't using bare hands but wielding a long sword. It was difficult to wield a sword that was one meter in length three times per second.

‘Very good.’

Grid was satisfied as he looked at the energy blades that looked like waves under the moonlight. He now had 176 stat points left.

“Hmmm.”

Grid thought for a while before decided to keep the remaining points.

‘Even if I invest all my points in agility right now, the proportion still won't match with strength... ’

In fact, he was impatient to invest points in intelligence. It was because he could learn Fireball once his intelligence reached 2,500. If he invested the remaining points in intelligence, he would be able to level Fireball in a relatively short period of time if he kept tailoring and leveling up. But Grid suppressed his impatient heart.

‘Intelligence will naturally increase whenever I level up. There is no need to invest points.’

The part that Grid felt lacking in right now was stamina. Grid had a high survival rate due to his items and various title effects, but it was more stable to increase his total health. Thus, there was value in investing points in stamina.

‘But I will watch more.’

Grid decided it would be better to save his points. He thought it was right to use the points after clearly figuring out what he was lacking when dealing with the formidable enemies he would face.

“Legendary Blacksmith’s Appraisal.”

Grid closed his status window and finally started to appraise Kruger’s items. First of all, he started with Kruger’s tailoring tools. It was a set of scissors, a knife, a tape measure, and a needle.

[Kruger’s Scissors and Knife]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 171/220 Attack Power: 311

\* Increases the cutting speed of cloth and leather by 10%.

\* Can cut all types of cloth and leather.

One handed scissors and a knife used by the legendary tailor Kruger during his life. They are sharp and durable and can even cut through the scales and skin of a dragon.

Weight: 10

[Kruger’s Measuring Tape]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 26/50

\* Increases the speed of cloth and leather tailoring by 15%.

A measuring tape used by the legendary tailor Kruger during his life. It has a total

length of 50 meters and boasts perfect accuracy.

Weight: 5

[Kruger's Needle]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: None Defense: 30

\* Increases the speed of cloth and leather tailoring by 20%.

\* Can pierce all types of cloth and leather.

A very thin needle used by the legendary tailor Kruger during his life. A needle made from the molar of an accidentally discovered silver dragon's remains, it can easily pierce all types of cloth and leather.

Weight: 0

"Wow."

In fact, Grid didn't have much expectations for the tailoring tools. At best, he expected it to be items that raised the probability of the item rating. However, Grid's expectations were completely wrong. Kruger's tailoring tools didn't have an option to raise the item rankings. Instead, it sped up the speed of tailoring and allowed him to work with all types of cloth and leather. It was a necessary item for Grid.

'It's unfortunate that there is no item rating increase option.'

It increased tailoring speed by a total of 45%. It meant that Grid could make two underwear in the time it took to make one. Furthermore!

'A knife and scissors that can cut all types of cloth and leather and a needle that can pierce...'

The reason why Grid couldn't cut several types of fabrics at the same time was because the strength was different for each fabric. It was impossible for Grid to cut cloth of different strengths simultaneously with ordinary scissors and needles. But now things had changed. With this, scissors and knife, Grid could cut many types of cloth and leather at the same time like Kruger.

'If I raise my tailoring skill, I will be able to make not only underwear, but usable cloth armor.'

He was happy. He felt joy and sadness in equal proportions. An increase in tailoring speed meant his workload increased. Of course, there was no need to increase the workload. But it was impossible for Grid's nature to not do so. The fear of being left behind didn't allow him to slack off.

"Hah... Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal."

Then Grid appraised the cloth. It was a cloth made of silk.

[Mysterious Cloth]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: None

A four dimensional cloth that neutralizes damage of the 'explosion' type.

Once the cloth is opened at the explosion point, all the explosive energy is absorbed into the cloth.

Cooldown Time: 10 minutes.

Weight: 1

"...?"

It was difficult for Grid to understand the item description. Absorb explosion type

damage?

‘What... Ah, perhaps?’

A chill went down Grid’s spine. He had a hypothesis and ordered the God Hands to keep the cloth open. Then he swung the Enlightenment Blade at the cloth. The result was amazing.

[The option effect ‘Black Flames’ has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

An explosion that caused splash damage over a radius of 10 meters. The flames that burst out!

*Syyyyyyyy!*

It was sucked into the cloth that the God Hands spread out. It didn’t do a single bit of damage to the area!

“...Crazy.”

Grid gulped. He was covered in sweat. Kruger was already equipped against fire and darkness.

‘...He was going to absorb the black flames with this cloth?’

What if Grid hadn’t neutralized Kruger with the electric shock and infinite stiffness...

‘Most of my damage would be blocked...’

In particular, the cooldown time of 10 minutes was likely to shorter when Kruger used it directly. NPCs and boss monsters often got a correction effect.

‘We would’ve fought for a few minutes before Kruger opened the barrier again to

create a new item.'

If it reached that stage, Grid's chances would fall exponentially. Grid shivered at the thought. He gathered the cloth together as Sticks entered the 63rd island and approached him.

"Now there are three islands left."

"Um."

Legendary miner Gis, legendary archer Povia, and Undefeated King Madra. According to Sticks' guess, there were three bosses remaining. Grid predicted that they would be relatively easy to overcome except for Madra. An archer with a weak body was nothing after breaking through the arrows, and a tanker's weakness was that they lacked attack power.

'Of course, I won't be careless.'

Grid breathed in deeply and stepped on the bridge to the 64th island.

"Go straight away."

Grid achieved his goal of winning without losing his immortality. There was no need to delay the time, so Grid immediately entered the 64th island. Then he met miner Gis.

*Clack!*

*Clack clack clack!*

The 64th island was a cave. It was a huge square where minerals grew everywhere. There was a death knight in the center of the cave, lit up by blue ores on the ceiling. Gis was a very large skeleton. It was comparable to Agnus' orc warrior that was turned into a death knight. Due to that, the pickaxe in his hand looked small.

"A tanker must be really durable."

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

Attacks with overwhelming damage! Grid didn't delay. Immediately after using Quick Movements and Blacksmith's Rage, he rushed to Gis. At that moment.

*Ttang!*

Death Knight Gis started mining. Despite the enemy rushing towards him, Gis started swinging his pickaxe!

"Eh?"

Grid thought it was ridiculous. It was difficult to understand why Gis was ignoring the enemy.

'Is his artificial intelligence broken?'

Maybe he could break through the 64th island quicker and easier than he expected. Grid smiled at the thought.

*Chaaeng!*

The Enlightenment Sword struck Gis' skull.

[Gis is mining. Gis is invincible when mining. You can't cause any damage.]

".....???"

Grid's eyes widened.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Gis didn't even look at Grid as he quietly focused on mining. Slowly, very slowly. For reference, the cave was over 200 square meters in size and all walls had minerals growing on them. Even Peak Sword, who specialized in mining, would take at least a fortnight to gain all the minerals from this cave. Grid thought of the worst scenario.

'The 64th island consumes time...?'

He couldn't break through until Gis finished mining. Didn't that mean his feet would be tied up by this trial for days?

“Dammit!”

Grid couldn't help cursing and turned his attention to the gate he had used just now. Of course, the gate was gone. Just like the other islands, he couldn't escape from the 64th island until he failed the challenge or cleared it.

*Ttang!*

Gis was still mining slowly like a turtle.

“...Ah.”

Grid was frustrated when he remembered that he only had enough food for four days. It was the first time he had been so frustrated since becoming Pagma's Descendant.



# Chapter 685

He attacked again and the result was the same.

[Gis is mining. Gis is invincible when mining. You can't cause any damage.]

"Ah, it's seriously nasty."

He wasn't talking about the 64th island. Grid felt disgusted with the Behen Archipelago itself. Every one of the 66 islands making up the Behen Archipelago required a special strategy, making him very tired and irritated.

"Well, some places were easy..."

The other players who challenged the Behen Archipelago would've been appalled if they heard this murmur. From the perspective of ordinary players, almost nothing about the Behen Archipelago was easy. This was the difference between Grid and other players.

Since Grid could create and produce items in real time, he cleared the Behen Archipelago more easily than others. For example, the hell moon stage was easily cleared with his Hooded Zip Up. However, even Grid felt that the average difficulty of the Behen Archipelago was very high. It showed the hell difficulty of the Behen Archipelago.

"What should I do?"

The legendary miner Gis was invincible when mining. Given his slow speed, it would take him more than a month to mine all the minerals. It meant challengers of the 64th island would be stuck here for more than a month. And Grid only had four days worth of food left.

"XX."

It had been a long time since Grid cursed like this. He was really upset.

“Aren’t I an all-rounder?”

That’s right. Grid was an all-rounder class capable of utilizing all types of weapons thanks to being Pagma's Descendant and the Weapons Mastery. He was a blacksmith and a tailor and knew how to use magic. But he couldn’t cook. Grid lacked the ability to cook food on his own. Therefore, he would starve to death. It couldn’t be helped.

"I'm not a real all-rounder..."

He would starve because he was missing one ability!

*Flop!*

Grid had fallen to his knees in frustrated when he suddenly got a flash.

‘Should I try it once?’

*Taang - taang-*

Grid slowly approached Gis, who was still mining while ignoring Grid’s curses and frustration. An ugly smile appeared on Grid’s face as he looked at Gis’ back.

‘It is theoretically possible.’

What was possible?

*Wiggle wiggle!*

Grid’s ten fingers moved without a break. That’s right. Grid was using his dexterity.

‘Right now, my dexterity exceeds 4,000.’

Women and even men felt an electric current when Grid poked them with a finger. There were those who couldn’t cope with the pleasure that came flooding in like a tsunami. Some of this tremendous dexterity was even applied in reality. Grid had deliberately sealed this power apart from when he slept with Irene, but now he unleashed it.

"I'll make you stop... Your legs will be so relaxed that you can't mine!"

Grid glared at Gis. Then he worked hard on tickling the bones. The result was amazing.

"..."

*Ttang! Ttang!*

No response!! Gis was assaulted by Grid's fingers but he devoted himself to mining without a change in attitude. Grid's over 4,0000 dexterity didn't have an effect!

"...As expected."

The opponent was too bad. The undead didn't feel a sense of pleasure or itching.

'Then the only way left... '

Grid didn't give up. He was experienced with overcoming frustration after facing hardships for a long time. His eyes were motivated and passionate as he thought of ways to overcome the current situation.



"This is the time to use your head."

On the 63rd island that Grid cleansed. Sticks felt anxious as he observed Grid through the crystal ball.

"Invincible during mining..."

The legendary miner, Gis. The number of great demons tied up by him and failed was more than one. Gis' ability was great. But Grid shouldn't be so frustrated. Grid's mission was to cleanse all of the Behen Archipelago.

'Grid, the concept of invincibility doesn't exist. Please keep your composure and find Gis' weakness.'

Of course, it wasn't easy. Pagma was a smart person. He would've tried to hide the weakness of Death Knight Gis. Sticks wasn't able to find Gis' weakness until just now.

'Basically, the key is to make him stop mining.'

No matter what Grid did, Gis kept devoting himself to mining. It seemed virtually impossible to make him stop mining.

'It is tricky... '

The possibility of breaking through the 64th island was very low. Sticks judged and bit his lips.

*Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid pulled out the portable furnace and started to make something.

"What are you making?"

Sticks couldn't understand it at all. It was because Grid couldn't stop Gis' mining no matter what he made.

"...Eh?"

Sage Sticks lost his dignity. He forgot about appearances and expressed his absurd thoughts. It was because the new item Grid made was a pickaxe.

"Don't tell me..."

He truly was a sage. Sticks corrected grasped Grid's intentions.

"S-Such an ignorant method....."

Why did Grid make a pickaxe? Just like he responded to the legendary tailor Kruger with making an item, it was clear he intended to respond to legendary miner Gis with mining.

'He will mine all the minerals so that Gis can no longer remain invincible...?'

Ah, how foolish. What an ignorant idea!

"Mining isn't something that anyone can do..."

The speed of mining would fall dramatically for anyone who didn't have the mining skill. Even if Grid used all his power, he would be as fast as Gis, who was deliberately going slow.

"No?"

Sticks stiffened. Grid had started to make several more pickaxes. After a while. Grid summoned the memphis and the doppelganger and threw them the pickaxes. Of course, the four God Hands were also armed with pickaxes. This wasn't the end.

"Can you Become the King of the Dead?"

Grid summoned two additional skeletons. The skulls were bigger than the skeletons and the eyes were wild, giving them a cute feel.

*Clack!*

*Clack clack!*

The two skeletons moved their jawbones like they were trying to appeal to Grid. They also held pickaxes in their bony hands.

"...The power of quantity..."

Was Grid going to make a another legend? Sticks belonged to the Overgeared Kingdom, so he knew its dictionary meaning.



Gis was invincible when mining. What should Grid do to avoid starving to death in four days? After his dexterity failed, Grid worried about it for a long time before coming up with a groundbreaking method.

"Yes, let's get rid of all the minerals in the cave... Gis will no longer have minerals to mine."

Truly an ignorant idea! Grid had already determined that Peak Sword would take a fortnight to obtain all the minerals in the cave with his Intermediate Mining Technique. Yet he had to do it in four days! Was this possible? It was impossible. Grid had been mining occasionally, but he still hadn't learned the mining skill. It was

difficult to acquire skills that were far away from his class. He didn't know who long it took the swordsman Peak Sword to obtain the mining skill.

Anyway.

"I can do it."

Grid was very confident in this plan that had a close to 0% chance of working. He naturally had grounds for this confidence.

"I have the Fantastic Pickaxe's production method!"

The Fantastic Pickaxe. It was the legendary rated pickaxe that Grid made for Peak Sword. It increased the probability of obtaining high grade minerals and gave the Intermediate Mining Technique Lv. 3 skill. Even if five year old would become a master of mining if he had that pickaxe!

"I will mass produce it."

Time was short. Grid didn't delay any longer. He immediately pulled out the portable furnace and started smelting the white phosphorus wood. The first mineral a blacksmith learnt to handle was iron ore and Grid quickly refined the iron ore that was the base of the pickaxe. Then.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Grid immediately started making the pickaxe on the anvil. He made a total of eight pickaxes. The time it took to make them? It was just two hours. This was possible because Grid learned to speed up during his production battle with Kruger. In the first place, a pickaxe was easy for a blacksmith to make. The result?

[Mass Produced Fantastic Pickaxe]

Rating: Epic

Durability: 125/125 Attack Power: 37

\* The chances of acquiring advanced minerals will increase by 3%.

\* The skill 'Beginner Mining Technique' master level will be generated.

A pickaxe based on the Fantastic Pickaxe made by Blacksmith Grid who is becoming a myth over a legend.

It isn't to the extent of the Fantastic Pickaxe, but it boasts an excellent performance.

User Restriction: Level 100 or higher.

Weight: 75

[Mass Produced Fantastic Pickaxe]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 150/150 Attack Power: 77

\* The chances of acquiring advanced minerals will increase by 3%.

\* The chances of acquiring the highest grade minerals will increase by 1%.

\* The skill 'Intermediate Mining Technique' Lv. 1 will be generated.

...

...

"Not bad."

Grid succeeded in producing two rare rated pickaxes, four epic rated and two unique rated. The performance was excellent. Of course, it was lacking compared to the legendary rated Fantastic Pickaxe. However, it was a masterpiece compared to ordinary pickaxes.

"Noe! Randy! God Hands! Can you Become the King of the Dead?"

*Pak!*

*Pa pa pa pat!*

Grid summoned so many familiars that it was like he had a summoner class. A black cat, a little girl, four golden hands, and two skeletons appeared around him. The God Hands had always been with Grid, but Noe, Randy, and the Overgeared Skeletons were meeting Grid after a long time. Grid threw pickaxes towards his pets who were very happy.

“Then let’s start.”

“...”

Noe felt deja vu. He was reminded of the mining that took place in the mine where the evil eyes stayed. Wasn’t he the best demonic beast of hell? Noe was very sad. But there was nothing he could do. Noe liked Grid, no matter how sad he felt. He had to follow Grid’s orders.

“Nyang!”

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Led by the tearful Noe, the pets started mining. In particular, Randy’s ability after transforming into Grid was dazzling. Grid looked satisfied and shouted at Gis.

“Let’s see how long you can stay invincible!”

Grid would take all the minerals in here in four days! Grid was filled with ambition and started mining with a passionate attitude.

*Peeok! Peeok!*

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Dirt was thrown every time a pickaxe dug into the wall, quickly turning Grid, Noe, and Randy’s faces black.

The legendary blacksmith, great magician, swordsman, and king of a nation, Grid. The greatest demonic beast of hell, Memphis Noe. The strongest doppelganger who dominated the Mysterious Forest, Randy. Existences that boasted such wonderful specs were covered in dirt in a mine. It was so unbelievable that people wouldn’t



believe it even if they saw it themselves. People just imagined that Grid was living a brilliant life. But what was the reality?

"Cough cough! U-Urgh...! Hey! Slave! Be careful not to blow the dust."

"Nyaang... Understood, ong." By the way, was I mistaken when I just heard you call me slave ong?"

"O-Of course. How can I call you a slave? Hahaha."

"..."

Grid's normal life was far from the glitz and glam. It was mostly miserable and pathetic. Noe and Randy met the wrong master.

# Chapter 686

‘Does this make sense?’

Grid’s chosen strategy for the 64th island was mining!

‘This is a scam!’

First, he felt hope.

The Overgeared Skeletons were armed with the rare rated pickaxes that gave Beginner Mining Technique Lv. 5, the God Hands had the epic rated pickaxes that gave Beginner Mining Technique master level, and Noe and Randy were armed with the unique rated pickaxes that gave Intermediate Mining Technique Lv. 1.

If he concentrated on mining with them, Grid thought he could get all the minerals on the 64th island before his food ran out. In addition, even if he failed to finish on time, he could rechallenge it. He would pack enough food for a few months and finish the mining before he starved.

That’s right. Grid interpreted the 64th island as easily cleared if he had enough food. But reality was unlike Grid’s idea. This was the Behen Archipelago and the islands in the 60s boasted an atrocious difficulty. The minerals on the 64th island...

They regenerated in real time. As soon as Grid’s group dug out a mineral, new minerals immediately grew on the spot. In other words, mining all of the 64th island’s minerals was impossible.

“Wow, I’m going crazy.”

Before he knew it, three hours had passed. Grid, who had focused on mining without giving up, eventually threw the pickaxe. Noe and Randy had long lost their motivation. They couldn’t be motivated since they worked so hard to obtain the mineral, only for new ones to grow again.

"I can only destroy the cave itself."

It would be nice if he didn't have to suffer all this trouble. But just like any other game, Satisfy had terrain that could be destroyed as well as those that were indestructible. And the 64th island was indestructible.

*Peeng!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

He struck again and again with the Enlightenment Sword and black flames exploded. However, the cave didn't move at all. The minerals caught in the explosion stayed in the same place. The cave couldn't be destroyed and minerals just grew again. There was no solution to this problem.

'How can I clear this place?'

It was difficult to think about how to disable Gis' invincibility. Common sense suggested that the 64th island wasn't built to be cleared. It felt like the maker had intended this to harass the player.

"Dammit... Why can't anything be solved easily?"

*Peok!*

The anxious Grid threw the iron ore he had just mined. At that moment.

*Flinch.*

Death Knight Gis, who hadn't stopped mining since Grid entered the 64th island, was stiff like a stone statue.

"...Nyang?"

Noe stuck his tongue out like a puppy and his big eyes blinked. He had witnessed Gis stop moving. However, Grid wasn't looking at Gis. He didn't want to look at the hateful bastard.

*Ttang! Ttang!*

Death Knight Gis started mining again.

"Master! Throw it again!"

Noe hurriedly exclaimed.

"What?"

Grid couldn't understand Noe's words. He had unconsciously thrown the iron ore out of pure anger and hadn't been aware of what he just did.

"I'm telling you to throw the iron ore nyong!"

"Eh?"

Why?

Questions were raised in Grid's mind. However, rather than asking a question, Grid moved first according to Noe's demand. It showed how much Grid trusted Noe.

*Peok!*

Grid threw the iron ore!

*Flinch.*

Gis stopped mining.

".....!"

Grid witnessed his appearance. Noe folded his arm and laughed at Grid's surprise.

"Nyahahat! How is this body's insight? I am the best demonic beast of hell ong! Nyahahat!"

"Good...! Well done! The best!"

Grid learnt the strategy to attack the 64th island! He once again threw an iron ore to stop Gis' mining and then used Pagma's Swordsmanship.

"Link!"

*Peeng!*

*Pepepepeok!*

The deep cave. Every time Grid wielded the sword, there was the sound of Death Knight Gis screaming.

“Kiyaaaaah!”

Gis lost his invincibility and his health!

Sticks shivered as he gazed at the sight in the crystal ball with admiration.

‘Figuring out the strategy for the 64th island in only a few hours...!’

The basic condition for attacking the 64th island was ‘mining technique.’ Grid met this condition with his ability to make items. Then by getting rid of the minerals, he shook Gis, who had an inherent ‘love of minerals.’ This resulted in the invincibility being lost. Gis was no longer invincible.

‘Of course.’

Gis was a tanker. He was a legend who boasted the highest defense. Gis might’ve lost his invincibility, but he wouldn’t be so easily damaged by Grid...

“Pinnacle Kill!”

“...It seems easy.”

◇ ◇ ◇

[You have dealt 42,350 damage to the target!]

Grid released Gis’ invincibility with Noe’s help! He immediately used Link but Gis’ defense was amazing. He felt three times more solid than other death knights and wasn’t damaged properly. However, Grid had the skills to penetrate defense. It was Pinnacle and Pinnacle Kill. In particular, Pinnacle Kill completely ignored the defense of the target.

*Chukakakakak!*

The stab caused Gis to lose a tremendous amount of health! Gis was threatened and immediately counterattacked.

[You have suffered 2,700 damage.]

A tanker's attack power couldn't cause serious damage to Grid. Gis' pickaxe failed to penetrate Grid's Triple Layers. After losing his invincibility, Gis was just good prey for Grid.

[The hidden passive 'God's Command' has reset the cooldown of Pinnacle Kill. If reused within three seconds, no resources will be consumed.]

"Pinnacle Kill!"

*Peeeeeeong!*

Gis, the guardian of the 64th island who caused a lot of frustration for Grid. He was unable to endure Grid's onslaught and eventually died.

[You have defeated Death Knight Gis, guardian of the 64th island!]

[The 64th island has been cleansed!]

[As a reward for cleansing the island, you have gained one level!]

[Gis' Pickaxe has been acquired!]

“Huh?”

Grid felt that the difficulty of the 64th island was very high. Gis himself was weak, but the island was the most difficult to purify since it was almost impossible to find the strategy. If it hadn't been for a coincidence, this was a place that would've been impossible for Grid to clear.

Therefore, he was feeling expectant. The reward would be enormous in proportion to the difficulty!

“But...”

The pickaxe was the only compensation?

“Hah...”

Grid sighed and used the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill without any anticipation.

*Ttiring~*

[Gis' Pickaxe]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 300/366 Attack Power: 190

- \* The chances of acquiring advanced minerals will increase by 20%.
- \* The chances of acquiring the highest grade minerals will increase by 8%.
- \* Increases the user's mining skill by 3.
- \* 150% increase in mining speed.
- \* 40% increase in defense while mining.
- \* There is a low probability of entering the 'invincible' state when mining.

A pickaxe that the legendary miner Gis loved in life.

Gis cared about this pickaxe so much that he asked to be buried with it.

Conditions of Use: Anyone who has the mining skill.

Weight: 111

“Wow...”

During the process of digging out Gis’ body from his grave, Pagma took his beloved pickaxe as well?

‘Based on Braham’s words, the more I know about Pagma...’

Well, Pagma’s nature wasn’t important at this moment. Grid just admired Gis’ pickaxe. There was an increase in minerals acquisition rate, it increased the mining skill of the user and greatly increased mining speed. In particular, the increased defense during mining and the invincible buff was great.

‘Can’t it be used to draw aggro?’

Grid was suddenly reminded of Peak Sword.

‘Whenever encountering an enemy, make Peak Sword go and mine minerals...’

It would be convenient to use him as a tanker. Peak Sword’s class was one known for its damage, but Grid had long forgotten this fact. It was because Peak Sword’s activities as a miner since the Hell Gao raid were really great.



[You have entered the 65th island.]

Now there were only two islands left. The 65th and 66th islands. Grid would succeed in cleansing the Behen Archipelago as long as he cleared two more islands. He would



be the hero who saved the Behen Archipelago, which lost its function for many years.

‘One of the original functions of the Behen Archipelago is the Hall of Fame.’

It was likely that Grid’s name would be stamped on top of the Hall of Fame. It would have a huge symbolic significance.

“Okay...”

Grid’s motivation was overflowing. His reputation was catching up with Kraugel little by little.

*Suuk.*

Grid started moving. The background of the 65th island was a forest. It was a huge forest with the sound of birds and insects. Grid predicted that the guardian of this dark forest without any sunshine would be the legendary archer Povia. It was because there were many good places to use as sniper points. It was like he expected.

*Syuk!*

“...!”

The problem was that the sound of the birds was too loud. Grid picked up on the flying arrows too late and couldn’t cope, the arrows precisely piercing Grid’s chest.

[You have suffered 6,993 damage.]

“Kuk...! Is this a godly archer?”

It was massive damage despite wearing Triple Layers that raised physical resistance. Grid recalled the fact that archers had the highest attack power among physical damage dealers and brought out the Holy Light Shield. It was intended to block the flying arrows and to receive less damage.

‘I have to figure out the location first.’

The key was to identify Povia's hiding place based on the direction of the arrows and then narrow the distance. An archer was weak so he was confident that he could overcome Povia if he narrowed the distance. But Povia was a legendary archer. As long as he had a favorable distance, he wouldn't make the mistake of exposing himself.

*Swaeek!*

*Puuooooook!*

Povia's arrows fell from the sky like rain, making it difficult for Grid to locate Povia.

"Che... Rain Arrows."

The skill Rain Arrow fired a large amount of arrows into the sky which would fall towards the target like rain. The strength of this skill was its wide range of attack and that it was difficult to predict. But it also had the advantage of hiding the archer's position. Grid found it hard to find where Povia was shooting from. The surrounding trees were so high that his line of sight was greatly disturbed.

"Noe! Randy!"

Grid summoned his pets and sent them all over the forest.

"Report to me immediately if you find out where the arrows are being fired from!"

The moment Grid gave the order to Noe and Randy.

*Jiing-*

Red apple emoticons appeared over Noe and Randy's hearts.

*Puk.*

*Puk puk!*

Arrows flew and pierced the apple. Noe and Randy's hearts were pierced.

"Nyaang!"

"Kyak!"

“What?”

Grid was upset when he saw Noe and Randy hit the ground. Apple emoticons appeared simultaneously on his face, stomach, heart, lungs, elbow, wrist, etc. It was the precursor of the ‘targeting’ skill.

# Chapter 687

‘Apple??’

Looking at the previous Noe and Randy, the apple effect seemed to mean that he was ‘locked on’ by Povia. It was the moment when Grid’s plan to defeat Povia with Freely Move was ruined.

“An archer has the ability to target from such a long distance...? Che! It completely destroys the balance! Magic Detection!”

*Pahat!*

Grid desperately felt the need to find Povia’s position quickly and used Magic Detection (Enhanced) He had used Magic Detection steadily every day and it was now level three. Then Braham’s voice was heard.

*-An archer’s sniping point isn’t comparable to an assassin. In particular, a legendary archer...*

Grid also knew this because he had watched Jishuka from the side. It was as he expected. Magic Detection failed to find Povia!

"Ah, your magic is useless whenever I actually need it."

*-It’s because you are incompetent.*

Braham was convinced that if Magic Detection had two more levels then Death Knight Povia would be quickly found.

*-That is why I always tell you to train your magic. Don’t create unnecessary underwear.*

It had been a while since Grid devoted himself to the tailoring technique rather than magic training. As Braham was sighing at him, arrows poured down from the sky. There were 11 arrows in total. Grid’s response was surprisingly calm.

“God Hands!”

First of all, he tried to block all the arrows falling to the right side using the God Hands and then evade the rest. It was a pretty good move. If Povia used non-targeted attacks, Grid would be able to escape from a large number of arrows with this behaviour. However, Povia's attacks were targeted and avoiding targeted attacks weren't possible with the Satisfy system.

*Jjang!*

*Puk! Puuok!*

A few arrows were reflected off the shield and the rest hit Grid.

"Kuk...!"

A total of six arrows hit him and he lost more than 40,000 health.

'Based on the damage, it ignored defense?'

*Tong!*

*Teteteteng!*

As five more arrows flew, Grid blocked it with the God Hands and shield and examined the arrows. It was a jaffa arrow.

"Tsk, no wonder why it hurts..."

Grid drank a health potion. The best potion made by Reidan's alchemy facility filled up his health gauge instantly.

*-Aren't you surprisingly calm?*

A huge forest with no sunlight. The lush greenery interfered with vision while the noisy chirping of birds interfered with hearing. Grid was currently in a pretty bad shape. He was confused by the one-sided attack of an invisible enemy and it wasn't strange to fall into a crisis. Yet Grid was reacting really calmly.

*-Do you have a good idea?*

Braham's tone was trying not to sound curious. Grid was confident.

"Even if Povia is a legendary archer, it is impossible to always shoot arrows. Isn't that right?"

Think about it realistically. An archer who could shoot a massive number of arrows over a large distance, and they were targeted attacks as well? It was obviously overpowered. It was a power that shouldn't exist.

'There will definitely be a cooldown on Povia's 'lock on' skill.'

It might be different when still alive, but it was likely that the death knight had a long cooldown.

'There was one each for Noe and Randy, then five out of 11 arrows for me. The next attack will be non-targeted.'

Non-targeted attacks were often more powerful than targeted attacks. The more powerful the attack, the harder it was to use.

'I can maximize the power of Revolve here. Then... '

Grid recalled the characteristics of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Revolve. It had the characteristic of 'hitting back any form of attack.' In other words, it returned the attack to the target. Grid guessed that he could take advantage of this part.

'If I go after the attack that is reflected by Revolve... I will find Povia.'

The ability to return an attack could also be used as a means of locating the enemy's position. Now Grid was showing real-time thinking. This was a sense that had been raised naturally. Grid felt proud, but wasn't arrogant.

'Kraugel would've thought of this use for Revolve the moment he got it.'

Every time he grew one step, he felt Kraugel's greatness more strongly. It was ironic. The closer he got, the further away he felt he was.

'...Discovering your greatness means I am becoming great as well?'

*Clink!*

Kraugel was also enjoying a risky adventure somewhere. Grid smiled as he imagined

the sight and swung the Enlightenment Sword.

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

This time, an arrow with a fearsome momentum fell from the sky like a meteorite. It was only one but the impact was enormous. If he allowed this attack... It was likely to be an attack containing fatal power. But Grid wasn't nervous. He already completed the strongest counterattack and only needed the right timing.

"Revolve."

*Kuwaaaaaang!*

The forest tilted. The meteor arrow was swept away by Grid's sword and caused Grid's skin to be distorted. Grid waited for a moment.

"Fly!"

He borrowed the power of Braham's Boots and flew behind the meteor arrow that was returning to where it had been fired.

'Alarm. Attach to Magic Missile. Three seconds later, deploy in front.'

*Yiing-*

Spheres of light started appearing around Grid's side as he flew through the trees.

"There!"

Once Grid descended to the ground, he saw Death Knight Povia hiding between cliffs.

*Peeeeeeong!*

First, the meteor arrow hit Povia, followed by the Magic Missiles fired at the same time. This wasn't the end.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship!"

Povia moved sideways to precisely avoid the meteor arrow and Magic Missiles, but Grid fired Link in the direction she was moving.

*Pit!*

*Pipipipipit!*

Dozens of energy blades emerged. There was also the summoning of a red lightning bolt and the explosion of black flames.

*Kurururung!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

“...!”

It felt like he was in the midst of a natural disaster. Povia struggled amidst the cliffs that crumbled due to the constant explosions. She fired arrows based on the high agility of a legendary archer.

“Quick Movements! Blacksmith's Rage! Freely Move!”

Grid's concentration reached its peak in order to reach the end of the Behen Archipelago. No, his concentration wasn't at the peak. That power only exploded when he was pressed, like in the fight against Kruger and Gis.

*Jjejeong!*

*Jjeejeeong!*

Grid broke through the rain of arrows, reached Povia and unleashed a series of basic attacks. The Enlightenment Lightning Sword roared in response.

[You have dealt 18,900 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 20,730 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 22,500...]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires...]



*Kuwaaaaaang!*

Overwhelming...! He unleashed a series of Pagma's Swordsmanship and then God's Command activated as well. It would break even the iron wall of the Undefeated King.

*-Is this enough?*

Braham asked from where he dwelled in Grid's body.

"Amazing...!"

Sticks watched Grid's battle in the crystal ball and repeatedly expressed his admiration.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeong!*

Povia's resistance was strong. She struggled against Grid's onslaught and fought repeatedly. It was very threatening to shoot at a close range and the high attack power caused Grid to fall into a crisis many times.

"Iyarugt!"

*Paaaat!*

Grid succeeded in passing the first crisis using Doran's Ring and overcame the second crisis with a health potion and Tiramet's Belt effect. Immediately before the First King effect kicked in, he grabbed a blood sword and summoned it. An old demonkin appeared beside Povia.

"Sublime Sword."

*Chukakakakak!*

"Kiyaaaaack!"

Strong. Braham and Sticks watched Grid with appreciation. Braham could no longer

treat Grid as a young person easily handled.

*-As expected! This force will be able to threaten a great demon!*

"After becoming a hero, reach the seven malicious...!"

[You have defeated Death Knight Povia, guardian of the 65th island!]

[The 65th island has been cleansed!]

[As a reward for cleansing the island, you have gained one level!]

[The Elf Bow Thimble (Made by Pagma) has been acquired.]

[World Tree's Necklace has been acquired.]

*Swaaaaah!*

A light shone in the dark forest. The light shone on Grid's sweaty and bloody face.

"Pant... Pant... Now there is only one left."

The Behen Archipelago, which had been challenged by the Overgeared members, Kraugel, Agnus, Damian, and Zibal. It was about to be captured by the Overgeared King Grid.

◇ ◇ ◇

[Elf's Bow Thimble (Made by Pagma)]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 100/111

\* Bow attack speed +20% when worn (elves receive double the effect).

\* Allows normal attacks or skill attacks to switch to 'target mode' (Three minute cooldown. The cooldown is halved when used by an elf).

A thimble made for Death Knight Povia by Pagma, a legendary blacksmith and Baal's Contractor.

It was designed to fit the body structure of Povia, born between a human and a elf.

Weight: 15

[World Tree's Necklace]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 20/22

\* 20% increase in strength and agility in elven territory.

\* 150% increase in mana regeneration in elven territory.

\* 1.2 times increase in movement speed in elven territory.

Before she became a legend, Povia was a loner who wasn't recognized by humans or elves. This necklace was given to her by the world tree, her only friend.

Weight: 50

'I can't say anything.'

All the items that Grid gained in the course of attacking the islands in the 60's were amazing. The value of all the items was enormous. The Behen Archipelago was a treasure house in itself. Grid was glad to be the first one here before anyone else.

A huge smile. Then the excited Grid heard Stick's voice.

"It is possible that the Undefeated King Madra still has his intelligence. You should be

cautious.”

“Still has his intelligence?”

The cleansed 65th island. Prior to entering the 66th island, Grid received a warning from Sticks.

“Death knights can have intelligence?”

“Yes, a body with a strong mind will have some memories of its life, whether it is a death knight or a lich. And these memories are the driving force.”

“A strong mind... What would the Undefeated King hold to his heart even after dying? It sounds like he died happily.

*-He died unhappily. He was murdered by his own son.*

“...Wow.”

*-Kukuk, I was betrayed by a friend, but it's nothing compared to Madra.*

“...”

Grid thought the story was more suitable for a morning drama than a Korean game.

# Chapter 688

“He was murdered by his own son...”

It was ridiculous. Such tragedy couldn't exist in the world. Coincidentally, this was the reality they lived in that they wanted so badly to deny. Incidents where blood kin harmed each other were common in history and modern society.

'Even an ancient man of power... '

He shouldn't forget this fact. Grid had been trying hard for a long time. The reason he was able to maintain his average grades in school was because he studied a lot more than other people. In particular, he was strong in subjects that required students to memorize rather than understand, such as history. He pledged after hearing about Madra, who was killed by his own son.

"At least in the Overgeared Kingdom, I will make it so that such sad things don't happen..."

Grid didn't know the specific details. But Grid wasn't uneasy about it. As a husband and a father, he believed there would be no discord if he cared for and respected his family.

'Just like my parents and Sehee cared for me... '

Grid smiled fondly at the thought. Then Sticks said to him.

"The reason why Prince Rajandra hurt Madra wasn't because of bad feelings. In Prince Rajandra's memoirs, we can see how much he loved and admired Madra."

“...?”

Love and admiration? No bad feelings? Then why did he murder his father? Grid found it absurd. He couldn't understand why Rajandra murdered Madra. Sticks' explanation was as followed.

"Madra believed he could defend Lubana for eternity. However, Prince Rajandra knew

that Madra was human and would someday die from old age.”

“Then?”

“Prince Rajandra was worried about after Madra’s death. At the time, just Madra’s existence alone caused the empire to continuously invade and Lubana was swept up in it. The more war there was, the higher Madra’s reputation became. However, the people of Lubana were torn to shreds.”

“...”

“Prince Rajandra asked this of Madra several times. For the people of Lubana, for the future of Lubana, let’s make peace with the empire. But this request was ignored every time. Madra condemned Rajandra as a coward and was disgusted by him. Time passed and Madra became a white-haired old man.”

“When Madra was in his last years, Rajandra’s nervousness reached its peak...”

“That’s correct. Apart from Prince Rajandra, all the nobles, knights, soldiers, and people were nervous and afraid. They thought that Lubana would be destroyed once Madra died and begged Prince Rajandra to take action. Madra’s head was given to the empire.”

“...”

In the process, the Lubana Kingdom became the empire’s possession. Prince Rajandra kept the lives of the royal family and the Lubana people in return for giving his father Madra’s head to the empire. He might’ve lost his kingdom, but he was alive. After that, Madra’s head was said to have hung at the gate of Titan, capital of the empire, for one year.

“...How pathetic.”

Grid felt uncomfortable at the thought of people spitting on Madra’s head whenever they entered the gate. It was a poor ending for the person who protected his kingdom all his life and was praised as the Undefeated King. But at the same time, he could understand the position of Prince Rajandra and the people of Lubana. Of course, he couldn’t advocate for what they did. But Madra couldn’t think from the position of the weak and was overconfident in his own strength.

‘If Madra didn’t have such a personality, this wouldn’t have happened... Hmmm.’

It was nothing but history. It already happened and the result was now. People lived in the present. They could learn from history.

‘I can’t get too immersed in my strength. Make Madra as the example.’

Grid got up from his seat. His gaze was fixed on the gate to the 66th island.

“...I will go and give the poor spirit his first defeat.”

Players had heard that Sword Saint Muller was the strongest person in the last decades. Of course, Grid was the same. In addition, according to Sticks, the Behen Archipelago was the succession site connecting past legends and present legends. In other words, legends existed before the legends of the previous generation that players knew.

Legends classified as sword saints, magicians, archers, assassins, blacksmiths, tailors, and miners were likely to have passed down their legacy for quite some time. But what about the Demon Slayer and Undefeated King? Alex had a grudge against great demons and cried out for the destruction of hell, while Madra was a legend because he had never been defeated. They were people who pioneered a new path, like the current Piaro.

Grid couldn’t rule out the possibility of them being more distinguished than other legends. Demon Slayer Alex had ‘hell restriction’ as a powerful force and might’ve seemed a bit weaker on the Behen Archipelago. But it was absolutely impossible for Madra to be the same.

‘The last boss is always the strongest.’

*Duguen! Duguen!*

Grid’s heart thumped as he moved to the 66th island. Grid was looking forward to being the first one to defeat someone who had never been defeated.



Eat Spicy Jokbal South Jeolla Province, Haenam Branch.

"Welcome!"

The Dungeon Maker, who was once head of Blood Carnival, was diligently doing business today. He loved jokbal and made sure to go to the store for at least one hour every day. The fun of picking up a hot and crisp jokbal and eating it one by one gave him happiness.

"Hmm, you have no customers today."

"...My store has a lot of delivery customers."

Eat Spicy Jokbal's expression hardened when he confirmed the identity of his customer. It was because the late night customer was Peak Sword. He was a Satisfy ranker representing South Korea, President of the Patriotic Association, and a marquis in the Overgeared Kingdom. He visited Eat Spicy Jokbal's Haenam branch once a week.

The purpose was naturally to obtain Eat Spicy Jokbal. It was analyzed that if Eat Spicy Jokbal's ability to make dungeons was combined with the Overgeared Kingdom, the power of the Overgeared Kingdom would rise significantly. It was natural to covet Eat Spicy Jokbal.

"One makguksu." (noodles)

Eat Spicy Jokbal looked coldly at the ordering Peak Sword.

"Why is it that you come here and order makguksu every time?"

Eat Spicy Jokbal opened a jokbal store and used Eat Spicy Jokbal as his game ID because he really loved jokbal. He didn't like it when Peak Sword came all the way from distant Seoul just to eat makguksu. He seemed like a person who hated jokbal. Peak Sword answered with a serious expression.

"I don't like jokbal."

"Jokbal... You dislike it?"

Eat Spicy Jokbal's face distorted like a demon. Peak Sword's expression was still serious. It even looked noble. It was reminiscent of an independent fighter during the Japanese occupation period.



“Hrmm... It would be better to lie and say I like jokbal to gain your favor. But I don’t want to lie to you. I want to be true companions with you. That’s why I will be honest.”

“...”

This man, he was honest to the extent of being stupid. And Peak Sword sincerely wanted him. Eat Spicy Jokbal was somewhat excited when he realized this. This great giant of South Korea knew his evil past, yet still coveted him. But he didn’t show it on the outside. Eat Spicy Jokbal kept staring at Peak Sword.

"Why do you dislike jokbal?"

That’s right. From the viewpoint of Eat Spicy Jokbal who loved jokbal, Peak Sword’s remarks were unacceptable. Peak Sword replied honestly to Eat Spicy Jokbal.

“It’s too expensive.”

“What...?”

"The price of jokbal is usually 30,000 won. But what about the volume? Isn’t it small enough that an adult male can eat it all by himself?"

“...Can you usually eat it all alone?"

“A person with a high basic metabolism like me can eat it all alone. But the price of jokbal can easily exceed 35,000 won. I can’t afford that price. Think about the cost of jokbal. Isn’t it enough to go to a butcher’s shop and buy two jokbal for 10,000 won? The prices I see for jokbal are ridiculously expensive.”

Of course, Peak Sword was rich. But he wasn’t born rich. During the hard days, there were times when he couldn’t eat jokbal when he wanted to eat it. This still made Peak Sword tremble. Eat Spicy Jokbal asked him.

“If... What if the jokbal is made of handon?"

“What? Han... Don?"

Peak Sword's eyes shook.

Handon! This meant domestic pork! Peak Sword shook.

A smile of satisfaction appeared on Eat Spicy Jokbal's face.

"My Eat Spicy Jokbal store uses jokbal made from handon. It is also the finest handon. Do you still think 30,000 won is expensive after hearing this?"

"Kuk...! You aren't fooling me about the origin?"

22nd century South Korea. Most of the meat was imported from foreign countries. The value of handon was enormous. The president of the Patriotic Association, Peak Sword eventually gave in.

"Okay! Add one jokbal to my order of makguksu!"

"Yes...!"

Peak Sword and Eat Spicy Jokbal. Due to the repeated meetings, they were becoming more familiar with each other. It was a story that showed how well the Overgeared Kingdom could run without Grid. On the other hand, breaking news was coming from the TV set on the wall of the restaurant.

『It has been confirmed that a common notification window has emerged in front of all players of Satisfy. The information of this notification window... 』

[A new hero has given peace to the specters of past heroes and has opened the final gate of the Behen Archipelago.]

This was a world message that appeared to every player connected to Satisfy. Who was the new hero and who were the specters of past heroes? In the first place, the Behen Archipelago wasn't a publicly known place. Only some of the top rankers monopolized the information and challenged it. The majority of players who didn't know about it were curious about the the identity of the Behen Archipelago.



Build strength against the five pillars of the empire.

This was a quest given to Agnus by Empress Marie. Agnus was a mighty force for Marie, who had the ambition to make her son the emperor. She invested a lot in Agnus. Agnus was on the way to receive her support when he hesitated.

“...The final gateway of the Behen Archipelago was opened?”

It meant someone had cleared the 62nd island that he failed to capture. But who had reached the last gateway? Agnus’ worries didn’t last long.

“Kik... Kikik, of course it must be you? Kraugel...!”

Agnus had to give up on the Behen Archipelago because of Demon Slayer Alex. Alex’s attacks were deadly to Agnus, who held the power of a great demon. It was a perfect counter to Agnus that made it impossible for him to beat the 62nd island. But Kraugel was different. There was no theoretical counter for him who had obtained the strongest combat class.

“Kikikik, yes! I am willing to concede if it’s you!”

If only he could take all the death knights of the previous legends. Agnus was sorry, but he didn’t cling to it. The value of the quest he acquired from Empress Marie was comparable to the Behen Archipelago.



“Who the hell reached the 66th island?”

“...I can’t imagine it.”

Hao and Alexander. They were with Kraugel and were stunned to see the world message. They couldn’t imagine that someone other Kraugel had managed to capture the Behen Archipelago.

‘Who...?’

Who had almost captured the Behen Archipelago, which they thought existed only for Kraugel? Kraugel laughed at the shaken Hao and Alexander.

“It’s Grid.”

“Grid...”

Hao and Alexander didn’t deny it. Grid’s strength during the duel against Kraugel in the 2nd National Competition and the Great Demon Belial raid was too intense in their minds.

“Let’s hurry up. Kirinus is a NPC who only appears once every three years. If I miss him today, I don’t know how long I’ll have to wait.”

“Yes...!”

There was no one who didn’t try, no one who missed an opportunity. From here on out, it was a matter of talent and tenacity.

# Chapter 689

Sword Saint was the strongest combat specialized class. History proved it and in fact, the current Kraugel felt it. Sword Saint Kraugel was level 259. It was 100 levels lower than when he was a white swordsman, yet the current Kraugel was several times stronger than when he was a white swordsman.

The amazing thing was that there was still room for Kraugel to grow. Just like Grid and Yura, Kraugel hadn't completed his class quest. In particular, one of Kraugel's class quests was to find Muller's swordsmanship and inherit it. If he acquired Muller's swordsmanship, Kraugel's power would grow exponentially stronger.

But Kraugel refused. He was a person who had no contact with Muller, who became a Sword Saint on his own. He didn't want his reputation to be buried in the shade of the former Sword Saint. He wanted to carve his own path.

"Thus, I looked for you."

"..."

The best spearsman on the continent, Kirinus. He didn't belong anywhere on the continent, but visited a certain place once every three years. It was Empress Aria's palace in the Saharan Empire. However, Empress Aria died five years ago. Now Kirinus was looking at a cemetery, not a beautiful palace that resembled Aria.

"I thought I would meet you if I waited here."

Kraugel greeted Kirinus politely. Kirinus looked at him with striking eyes.

"Surrounded by the ultimate sword energy... You're the one who has pierced the peak of swordsmanship."

"Just as you have peeked at the peak of the spear. I would like to ask for your teachings."

"The peak swordsman is asking me to teach... This means you are admitting that the sword is less than the spear."

“No. Regardless of the sword or the spear, I am inferior to you. For now.”

"For now... It will be different later."

Kraugel had two class change methods. The first was to succeed in Muller's swordsmanship as mentioned above. The second was to fight and defeat the best warriors in each field. Of course, it was unlikely that Kraugel, who hadn't reached level 300, could win against the strongest warriors in each field like Kirinus. No, it was a close to zero chance. Thus, Kraugel pledged that things would be different in three years.

"In return for teaching me today, in three years I will teach you."

"Hah!"

Kirinus burst out laughing. The ultimate swordsman, who hadn't yet ripened, was speaking nonsense. But there wasn't any feeling of animosity. Rather, there was some liking.

"You will teach me... How interesting. Then shall I teach you in anticipation of three years from now?"

-----!

There was no sound. Kirinus's blue spear was only a dot. It was reminiscent of a dot that a brush made on white paper. But the impact that Kraugel received was powerful. Despite defending against Kirinus' spear, Kraugel's body flew 10 meters away.

[The impact was too big! Your perfect defense has failed!]

[You have suffered 8,130 damage.]

'I couldn't avoid it?'

Kraugel wiped the blood flowing down from his mouth and was convinced.

'Indeed, the strongest warriors in each field obviously have the super sensitivity skill.'

It was unknown if the super sensitivity was applied passive like with the Sword Saint, or actively like the great swordsman. But those who had super sensitivity gave off a tremendous pressure.

'Grid, what enemy are you facing right now?'

On this day, Kraugel saw a bigger world and his passion became greater. It was the same for Hao and Alexander who were watching from the side. This short experience held huge value for them.



What was the Behen Archipelago?

As soon as the world message appeared, many media outlets started to gather information about the Behen Archipelago. They needed to get the information rapidly so that it would be a scoop. As a result, the public was able to grasp the identity of the Behen Archipelago relatively quickly. The Hall of Fame and succession place for legends.

But now it had changed for some reason. It had a brutal difficulty even for the top 100 rankers and was one of the few ways to move to the East Continent. Rumor had it that the top rankers and Pope Damian had failed to capture the Behen Archipelago.

Then who was it? Who had reached the last gateway of the Behen Archipelago? This was a huge topic. The media outlets around the world were busy guessing the main character of the world message. And the most likely candidate was Kraugel.

Grid, Agnus, and Ares, who showed skills beyond common sense in the Belto Kingdom war, were also considered candidates, but the sky above the sky Kraugel overwhelmed all of them. It was natural. Kraugel had won against Grid when he was just a normal class. Now that he was a Sword Saint, it was estimated that he was much better than the three players.

'They can't imagine it.'

The Overgeared members who saw the news could only laugh. Kraugel had already

failed to break the Behen Archipelago and Grid was actually the main character of the world message. They were excited about the turmoil that would once again happen once the news got out.

The Overgeared members didn't know either. The impact of capturing the Behen Archipelago wasn't just at this level.



[You have entered the 66th island.]

[You deserve praise for reaching this place.]

[Give rest to the last remaining hero...]

"The notification windows are very interesting."

The guardian of the 66th island was the last remaining hero. It was right to interpret that the legend who became a death knight was also in a painful position.

"Umm...?"

Grid was slightly confused when he saw the 66th island. It was just flat ground. That's it. The 66th island was a stage without small stones and bushes. There was no place to hide and the terrain couldn't be taken advantage of when facing the enemy.

*-A place where you can't use shallow tricks.*

Grid was convinced after hearing Braham's voice.

"A stage where pure combat is prioritized... Indeed, the owner of this place is Madra right?"

Braham agreed.

*-Right. He was the ultimate warrior before he was a genius strategist. A place for a one on one match with no variables is the best for a guy like him. In the first place, he can achieve a perfect victory on any terrain.*



'A genius? The ultimate? Perfect? Braham is praising him so much...?'

Braham's evaluation of Madra was at least equal to Muller and Mumud.

"...Sigh."

Grid felt his heart pounding. Was it due to fear? Yes. Did he want to run away? No. Grid was glad to be enough to fight against an opponent that caused fear. He didn't want to run away.

Sticks would be amazed if he found out about this, but since winning the First King title and quickly becoming powerful, Grid didn't have experience with fighting with all his strength. He hadn't met the right opponent. It was the same in the Behen Archipelago.

'In that sense, I want to fight the first knight. Even if I would've lost.'

But he couldn't fight Mercedes. If he fought with her, it would be the end of the Overgeared Kingdom. However, now things were different. There weren't any external factors involved. He just had to fight with all his strength to obtain the rewards.

'If I can figure out my skills here, it will be a big help in the National Competition.'

The schedule for the 3rd National Competition was later than usual. One of Grid's goal was to win against Kraugel in the National Competition that would be held in three months. In order to face that day in a perfect condition, Grid was happy to fight strong opponents.

*Step.*

*Step, step.*

A death knight wearing majestic armor was slowly approaching. There was an amazing sense of power from the gait, despite it only being a body made of bones.

'Sword... I thought he could use a variety of weapons because he is the ultimate warrior.'

The name 'Madra' clearly appeared in gold above the head of the death knight in majestic armor. He held an ordinary long sword around one meter in length and

looked Grid up and down with a purple light.

“It has been 100 years since a human guest appeared. One day, Pagma died, my strength weakened and the invasion of the great demons was over.”

“.....!”

Grid was startled. He held that Madra was likely to maintain his intelligence, but he hadn't expected Madra to speak clearly like a human. Madra asked the confused Grid.

“Did you beat the halflings guarding the previous islands?”

“...?”

The halflings guarding the previous islands? Who were the halflings? Grid cocked his head and replied firmly.

"All of them except for Lantier."

"I see..."

Indeed, the halflings that Madra spoke of were the death knights of past legends. He called the legends halflings! How strong was Madra?

‘Will this be tougher than I imagined?’

The tense Grid grinned. Madra, who was still looking him up and down, nodded like he understood.

"Well, it's Pagma's fault. Their names are legends, but they fell after becoming death knights. Once Pagma died and the supply of power was cut off, they couldn't exert their strength properly. But you're still pretty good. For a human to hurt those halflings... You're also a present legend... Hmmm?"

Madra cocked his head. It was because he found it hard to determined Grid's identity.

"Despite being armed with a sword, you aren't the peak swordsman. You bear the soul of a hybrid vampire, but only have this much magic power? But you have the dignity of a king...?"

A human who reached the 66th island. Madra called Grid a present legend. But he wasn't a swordsman nor a magician. It was difficult to gauge his true identity because only his high dignity could be seen. In the end, Madra couldn't resolve the question and asked openly.

"What do you call yourself?"

"Call myself..."

What did he want the world to call him? Shin Youngwoo? Grid? Pagma's Descendant? He was all of them, but more so...

"Overgeared King... I am the Overgeared King."

"Overgeared King...? Hoh, a king!"

Madra showed great interest in Grid's answer. Since he was also a legend and a king, he felt a strong sense of kinship with Grid.

"Yes, what does overgeared represent?"

Madra was never defeated, which was why he was called the Undefeated King. Then was why the human in front of him called the Overgeared King? Madra waited for the answer like a kid filled with pure curiosity. Grid was thinking about how to explain being overgeared and summoned the God Hands. The God Hands were armed with Mjolnir.

"Hoh?"

Grid explained to Madra, who was surprised to see the golden hands moving by themselves.

"Overgeared is being able to make the best use of these tools. That is why I am called the Overgeared King."

Best? A person who knew Grid would say that 'he has no conscience.' But the only ones here right now were Grid, Braham, and Madra. Madra didn't know the truth.

"I see. You have the ability to make good use of battle gear... Um?"

Madra nodded with interest, only to suddenly frown. Looking back, there weren't any legends who didn't have this ability. In other words, it was a basic thing for all the legends to be overgeared. But the human in front of him was speaking as if this basic thing was his own outstanding ability.

"This... Maybe you are mocking me. Well, you don't need to reveal your identity if you don't want to. It is reasonable to be reluctant to show it before a fight."

This conversation was coming to an end.

"Your purpose is to purify the now useless Behen Archipelago. If you want to cleanse it, then you have to beat me. As a death knight, my existence is to repel all intruders. A fight is inevitable. In addition."

*Supaak!*

"Whether alive or dead, I have never experienced defeat. Not even once."

"...!"

The voice of Madra, who was in front of him just a moment ago, was suddenly heard right beside him. Madra in front of him had suddenly disappeared. The moment Grid realized this.

[You have suffered 11,200 damage.]

"Kuk...!"

Grid was sliced in the side. Death Knight Madra recreated the top level footwork that Garam showed. He had never been defeated, became the Undefeated King and maintained this position in the Behen Archipelago. He had become weaker after becoming a death knight and weaker again after Pagma's death.

"100,000 Army Massacre Sword."

*Chukak.*

*Chukakakakak!*

Madra's majesty remained. The sword technique that was twice as fast as Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link cut at Grid's body 40 times per second.

# Chapter 690

Chapter 690

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeong!*

100,000 Army Massacre Sword. Like the name, it was a skill with ridiculous power. The scope of the sword wielded by Madra affected not just Grid, but a radius of 100 meters around Grid. Thousands of energy blades filled the vast plains. It was a wide area skill.

[You have suffered 10,900 damage.]

[You have suffered 11,310 damage.]

[You have suffered 10,870 damage.]

[The experience of Tiramet's Belt has increased by 0.12%!]

[You have suffered 11,100 damage...]

...

...

...

[The First King title effect is activated.]

[A great king puts his safety first. You have lost 70% of your maximum health, so a shield containing the health you lost within the last minute will be created. All terrain adaptability has increased by 100% while movement speed and defense has increased by 10%.]

[You have obtained a shield containing 61,722 health.]

[You have suffered 9,870 damage.]

[You have suffered 10,200 damage.]

[You have suffered 9,930...]

...

...

[The experience of Tiramet's Belt has increased by 0.12%!]

[The shield is destroyed!]

“Freely Move!”

It happened in less than a second. It was impossible to Grid to have rational thoughts. Once his health gauge fell tremendously and the effect of the First King title was activated, he just demonstrated his survival instinct. But it was an instinct that came from a lot of experience and it worked properly.

*Supak!*

*Pa pa pa pat!*

“...Um!”

Madra was surprised when his attacks that hit Grid suddenly started to miss. Then Grid’s sword fell towards his neck. Four strikes per second!

*Puk.*

*Puuok!*

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 7,600 damage to the target!]

[You have recovered 912 health thanks to Elfin Stone's Ring!]

[The experience of Elfin Stone's Ring has increased by 0.2%!]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 7,540 damage to the target!]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 7,660 damage to the target!]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 7,590 damage to the target!]

"I can't avoid it... I have really weakened..."

"Weakened..."

Grid gulped. He belatedly realized. At the time of the 2nd National Competition, the Undefeated King's armor worn by Bubai posted high defense and physical resistance.

'My criticals deal less than 8,000 damage. Madra is a monster who combines tanking ability with attack power.'

A superior version of Grid. This was Madra. As the enlightened Grid was filled with a greater tension, Madra's hands tightened their grip on the sword several times.

"It isn't easy to use the sword with a body that is only bones. I can only use 100,000 Army Massacre Sword in this shape."

"...!"



Bosses who disturbed the story must be attacked by players. There must be room to defeat them. Unless they were a dragon that was made impossible to attack in the first place. Therefore, the S.A. Group would put in an appropriate arrangement. Based on the actions of the boss, the players could get a hint on the strategy.

Of course, it was up to the players to find the hint. The experienced Grid noticed that Madra's right hand seemed somewhat uncomfortable.

'Madra's hand bone is cracked!'

In retrospect, Madra was giving several hints. He emphasized several times that he was weakened, acted as if the hand holding the sword was uncomfortable and said it was hard to use the sword with an undead body. Grid's brain was activated.

'Madra is the type of boss that gets weaker as we fight.'

There were occasionally bosses like this. The bosses were ridiculously strong, but weak when it came to endurance.

'Every time he uses the sword, his body will collapse and he will eventually self-destruct.'

It meant Grid only needed to endure the first and middle parts. But Grid had already lost the First King title and Freely Move.

Would it be that easy to hold on?

"I will soon see! God Hands!"

*Tong!*

*Teteteteng!*

The God Hands moving around Grid started their assault, aiming Mjolnir at Madra from different orbits. But Madra was the incarnation of war. He always fought against many enemies. He could attack while blocking the four God Hands.

"One Million Army Breakthrough."

*Pahat!*

Madra's movements were alert. He spun his body and avoided all the attacks of the God Hands, managing to reach Grid.

"...!"

"200,000 Army Crushing Sword."

*Kuooooooh!*

Sword cutting through the plains! Shock waves of aura in a half moon shape were emitted from the top of Madra's sword.

*Kuwaaaaaah!*

The physical earthquake caused Grid's body to stagger as an aura blade aimed at his upper body. The power was enough to separate Grid's upper and lower body. However, Grid had already been thinking ahead. After he ordered the God Hands to attack, he used Pagma's Swordsmanship, Revolve.

"Huh?"

*Kwajak!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

Grid's circular sword swallowed Madra's explosive attack and returned it. The purple aura that should've turned Grid into a corpse struck Madra instead.

[You have dealt 2,118,000 damage to the target.]

Grid grinned as he confirmed the notification windows.

'...Isn't this crazy?'

Was it called 200,000 Army Crushing Sword? Madra, whose defense was so powerful and Grid only did 7,000 damage to, ended up receiving 2 million damage. Grid clearly

understood that allowed Madra's attack to hit once meant losing his immortality.

"Pagma's Descendant."

Madra finally realized Grid's identity. After the usage of 200,000 Army Crushing Sword, Madra switched his sword to his left hand.

"Very interesting. It's Pagma who made the current place, and now his descendant is going to purify it."

"...?"

Grid was surprised. It was because Madra's attitude was too light.

"As you have discovered, I am Pagma's Descendant. The Pagma who turned you into a death knight is like my teacher. Don't you have anything special to say to me?"

"What should I say to you?"

"...Pagma has been holding you here for over 100 years."

"Hrmm...? Kukuk, I see. Do you think I would have a grudge against Pagma and then shift that grudge onto you?"

"..."

That's right. Grid recognized the legends that guarded the Behen Archipelago as 'victims.' They couldn't rest comfortable after they died, but were instead forced to resurrect and fight in solitude for over 100 years. Strictly speaking, he felt sorry for them. Madra shrugged as he read Grid's heart through his eyes.

"In fact, the only poor person is the hybrid vampire inside you. He is the sad fellow who was betrayed by Pagma and now has to sponge off Pagma's Descendant. In later years, he started to feel human emotions and is craving for affection."

*-This bastard...!*

Since entering the 66th island. Braham had been in a state of discomfort since Madra called him a hybrid vampire. Now he could no longer resist feeling anger after being mocked. Grid barely suppressed Braham who was attempting to run wild.

‘Please stop being a troll.’

During the battle with Agnus, Grid was forced into the assimilated state and was unable to exert its original strength. He didn’t want another similar situation to occur again. Relying on Braham during important fights always had unintended results, so he was reluctant to pass the responsibility onto others.

‘I will teach him a lesson. So believe in me and watch.’

*-Grid...*

Braham was moved. Nobody had ever told the strongest magician in history to depend on them. Grid’s words were unfamiliar to Braham and caused Braham’s soul to shake. But he didn’t express it.

*-Bah...! Don't let it get to you! You should keep this in mind! The current Madra is weak! You can't lose!*

‘Uh, yes...’

Madra was weak. This was when compared to his previous life. Grid didn’t know the Madra of the past, but it was correct to say that the current Madra was his strongest enemy. There was no room for cockiness.

“Quick Movements. Blacksmith's Rage.”

Grid pulled out the Ideal Dagger and aimed at Madra’s right side after using the buff skills. It was a weakness because Madra was less likely to fully use his cracked right hand. Grid wore the Slaughterer's Mask and Slaughterer’s Eye Patch, activated Vital Spot Detection and aimed at only that point.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship! Link!”

*Pit!*

*Pipipipipit!*

It might look shabby compared to 100,000 Massacre Sword, but Grid’s Link also boasted speed. 20 energy blades per second poured towards Madra’s right side. But Madra responded easily. He moved to Grid’s left side and tried a flowing counterattack.

At that moment.

*Chaaeng!*

“...!”

Madra’s back was hit by a God Hand wielding Mjolnir. Madra was hit because Grid anticipated he would avoid to the left. Braham cheered.

*-Yes! That's it! Now he is just a skeleton! He doesn't have a brain and is hit by your shallow trick!*

‘...What is the point of saying it is shallow?’

*Teong!*

Grid started a new sword dance the moment Madra stiffened. It was Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle.

“This?”

*Kuoooooooooh!*

Madra was stunned when he saw the sword dance. It was surprising for Madra, who knew Pagma and Pagma’s swordsmanship. Linked Kill Wave Pinnacle had a power reminiscent of Pagma’s ultimate technique during his peak period.

"Reaching this level without borrowing the power of the Duke of Flames...!"

*Puk.*

*Puuooook!*

*Kurururung!*

Slash, stab, slash, stab, a downward blow and then slash again. Flames, red lightning bolts, and black flames emerged from the Enlightenment Lightning Blade and continuously bombarded Madra.

[You have dealt 113,500 damage to the target!]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 256,200 damage to the target!]

[God Hand (1) has dealt 1,010 damage to the target.]

[The Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir has caused the target to stiffen for 0.3 seconds.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has dealt 15% additional lightning damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 129,700 damage to the target!]

[God Hand (2) has dealt 650 damage to the target.]

[The +7 Mjolnir (2) has caused the target to stiffen for 0.1 seconds.]

[The option effect of the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires has summoned a red lightning bolt!]

[You have dealt 278,030 damage to the target!]

[The target is caught in an electric shock for 1.2 seconds!]

[The option effect 'Black Flames' has activated from the Lightning Sword Born from Enlightenment and Strong Desires!]

[Critical!]

[You have dealt 950,490 damage to the target!]

It was an infinite stiffness method completed by connected the continuous stiffness of the four Mjolnirs and the electric shock effect of the red lightning bolt. The Undefeated King felt helpless for the first time since he was living or dead.

"I will take away the title of undefeated...!"

Attack, continuously attack. Grid's excited voice rang through the 66th island. He summoned Noe and Randy to his side.

# Chapter 691

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeong!*

There was a loud sound every time Grid hit Madra. Every attack summoned either red flames, a red lightning bolt, or black flames, causing intense sound effects. It wasn't possible to compare it to the sound of a general weapon. Needless to say, it was intense power!

"Umm...!"

Madra.

He was called the Undefeated King because he had never been defeated and was eventually a legend. To him, who was an absolute being when alive and death, the helplessness that Grid was making him feel was new. At first he panicked when the golden hands wielding the hammer caused him to stiffen with every hit, then he laughed.

"Kuk...! Kukukuk! I see! This is how ordinary people fight!"

Legendary characters resisted all conditions except for 'states that occurred due to physical force' and 'states that ignore resistance.' Yes, strictly speaking, it wasn't perfect. But Madra was different. In order to not be defeated, the precondition of blocking any variables was necessary. Thus, he had the unique ability of 'perfect' status resistance among all the legends. In terms of safety, he was superior to Sword Saint Muller's Super Sensitivity.

But that was a story of the past. Madra had lost most of his abilities after being resurrected as a death knight. This was why he couldn't resist Mjolnir's stiffening effect.

"I...! The Undefeated King Madra is faced with a situation I can't cope with! This is truly an unfamiliar and enjoyable experience!"



'What is this stupidity?'

*Peeok!*

*Peok peok peok!*

The four God Hands continued to strike Madra's skull. The four Mjolnir's continuous attacks caused infinite stiffness. The winner and loser had been decided. Madra could no longer do anything. He was destined to be beaten to death. Yet he was laughing with delight.

'Agnus...?'

In other words, he was crazy. Grid was misunderstanding. It was a fact that had been emphasized a few times, but Madra had never been defeated. He was undefeated because of his coolness during battle. The fact that he was laughing meant it wasn't a crisis situation.

*Jjeok!*

*Jjejejeok!*

On the other hand, the explosion and intensive attacks of Mjolnir were causing cracks on Madra's skull.

'Okay. Keep pushing like this.'

Grid confirmed that Madra's health gauge had fallen before 50% and spurred on his attacks. As long as the infinite stiffness was maintained, Grid didn't doubt his victory.

Then.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeng!*

After a minute and black flames exploding a few more times, Madra's health gauge dropped to 30% and his skull broke. The right forehead bone was completely destroyed. At that moment.

"I have been waiting for this time!"

"...!"

Madra escaped from the infinite stiffness. The reason was simple. The moment Madra's right forehead bone was broken, the timing for the strike of God Hand (3) was slightly delayed. Why? It couldn't be helped because the shape of the target had changed after hundreds of hits.

God Hand (3) had been hitting Madra's forehead in 0.6 second intervals to match the behavior of the other God Hands. Once Madra's forehead bone was broken and it lost its position, it was confused and had to make a new judgment. Due to this, there was a gap of less than 0.2 seconds after the stiffness ran out and this was the timing Madra had been waiting for. Madra had already foreseen that this situation would occur due to the weak durability of his body.

*Puok!*

It happened in the blink of an eye. Madra broke through the encirclement of God Hands and his sword pierced Grid's chest.

[Critical!]

[You have suffered 26,130 damage.]

[The experience of Tiramet's Belt has increased by 0.12%!]

"Che...!"

A frontal battle wasn't the answer. Grid had to restore the infinite stiffness again. Grid made a rapid judgment and the God Hands once again surrounded Madra. But it was useless.

*Peeeeeeong!*

Madra's sword in Grid's chest exploded. It was the manifestation of 200,000 Army

Massacre Sword that exploded in a range of hundreds of metres around Madra.

“...Kuock!”

Grid screamed as he was swept up in the explosion and his vision blinked red.

[You have suffered catastrophic damage!]

[The God Hands have become stiff.]

[The experience of Tiramet's Belt has increased by 1%!]

[A legend doesn't die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

‘What...?’

Grid had maintained his maximum health during the time when Madra was caught in the infinite stiffness. His close to 90,000 health could be compared to the health of the tankers in the top 100 rankings. All of this was wiped out by two hits and his immortal passive was activated. This was despite Grid being armed with Triple Layers.

‘This is the power of a basic attack and wide area skill...!’

It was a scam. This was a real scam!

‘The other death knights can only use basic skills. What is this monster?’

Grid thought that 200 Army Massacre Sword was Madra's ultimate technique. The scope of the attack reached a few hundred metres and the power was the strongest, so he had to think like this. It was unfair that Madra could use his ultimate attack despite becoming a death knight. Then Braham's voice entered the ears of the confused Grid.

*-This is a basic skill. Madra's true value is revealed from at least 500,000 Army Massacre Sword.*

‘What? At least?’

*-The power that symbolizes Madra is the One Million Army Massacre Sword. The current Madra is weak... His limit is only 200,000, it is indeed weak. You can't think of that as Madra.*

“...”

Grid didn't hear it. He tried to ignore Braham's voice.

‘I have to end it in five seconds.’

He used Blackening and was determined to launch all attacks within five seconds. But was it something that could be done through just determination? The world he lived in wasn't that good.

“I won't allow it.”

*Peeok!*

Madra recovered the sword stabbed in Grid, kicked out and pushed himself away from Grid. Madra was also a legend. He knew about a legend's immortal power.

“You won't be able to reach me.”

“Hey...! You cowardly wretch!”

Madra spoke in a dignified tone of voice. However, this tone was incompatible with his actions. In order to not allow Grid access while he was immortal, Madra was already running away from Grid. It was virtually impossible for Grid to catch up to Madra who used shunpo in advance.

“Wait there! Oh! Stand there!”

“Hahaha! See if you can catch me!”

“Ahh! I will catch you!”

-...

Grid had four seconds left in his immortal state. Madra ran through the plains yelling “Catch me,” while Grid chased him. At first glance, it seemed like they were long time lovers. It was a hot scene of a old skeleton and a young man!

-... *What are you doing?*

The moment Braham cried out in disgust.

“It is time.”

*Teong!*

Just before Grid’s immortal state ended, Madra stopped running away and struck at Grid instead. He intended to end the fight as soon as Grid’s immortality was over. Anyone who understood the immortal passive would make the same judgment.

Thus, it was easy for Grid to predict. He took a superior health potion ahead of time, wore Doran’s Ring and prepared a sword technique in advance. Of course, it was Revolve. The strongest counterattack skill that would return the enemy’s attack.

However.

*Jeeeong!*

“.....!”

Grid’s eyes widened as Revolve countered Madra’s attack. It was because Madra attacked him with a ‘basic’ attack. In other words, the Revolve that Grid prepared was wasted on a basic attack.

“Hahaha! You are ridiculous!”

‘He knew...!’

Indeed, Madra knew Pagma so it was likely he would know about Revolve. He predicted that Grid would use Revolve at this timing.

*Syuoook!*

Madra’s 100,000 Army Massacre Sword flew towards the neck of the confused Grid.

“Grid...!”

The 65th island. Sticks was pale as he watched through the crystal ball. He was astonished at Madra’s power and seriously worried that he would have to give up on the purification of the Behen Archipelago. But Grid was different. A wide smile appeared on Grid’s face as he gazed at Madra’s attack, causing Madra to feel suspicious.

“Revolve.”

“...What?”

The sword technique Madra just neutralized was used again?

*Kuwoooooh!*

100,000 Massacre Sword. The attack originally intended to kill Grid was returned to Madra. Then.

*Peeeong!*

It hit.

[You have dealt 1,435,900 damage to the target.]

“Cough...”

The earth was swept away by an explosion. The new, unbeaten king shaking on top of it... Who would have imagined? The Undefeated King Madra was forced into a crisis twice by the same opponent!

"Nobody could've imagined it. Isn't that right?"

Grid was able to use Revolve successively because of God’s Command. Grid honestly escaped from the crisis out of pure luck but he didn’t express it on the outside. He pretended to be dignified as he spoke.

“Except for one person. Didn’t I tell you? I will take away your title of undefeated.”

“Hah...!”

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship!”

“300,000...!”

Grid started to perform the sword dance of Transcended Link while Madra attempted to resist. Unfortunately, there was a physical difference between the two. Death Knight Madra. His frail body consisted entirely of bones and had already reached its limits.

“Army...!”

*Jjeok!*

"Massacre...!"

*Jjejejeok!*

“.....Sword!”

*Kuaaaaang!*

He wanted to use 300,000 Army Massacre Sword to neutralize the enemy’s skill attack. Madra wanted to escape the crisis, but just worsened it. Madra’s cracked and damaged body could no longer withstand the mighty force. 300,000 Army Massacre Sword completely smashed Madra’s left arm and shoulder, while his rib and leg bones sank in.

*Flop!*

The sword technique failed. Madra fell down. He wasn’t laughing any more. But there wasn’t any feeling of animosity. He faced Grid with a humble attitude. Despite the fact that he was losing the title of undefeated that he defended for hundreds of years, there were no signs of obsession with it.

Madra was already exhausted. Since his resurrection as a death knight, he had lived in solitude on the 66th island for more than 100 years. As the Undefeated King, he couldn’t express himself or complain, but it had taken a toll on his heart. He had been

longing for rest.

“...Overgeared King, the legend of the new era. I am thankful for you giving me enjoyment at the end. I will give you a reward.”

“...Madra!”

A short thank you and goodbye. The moment Madra’s voice entered Grid’s ears.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeok!*

Grid’s Transcended Link covered Madra.

[You have dealt 21,560 damage to the target!]

[You have recovered 2,587 health thanks to Elfin Stone’s Ring!]

[The experience of Elfin Stone’s Ring has increased by 0.2%!]

[You have dealt 24,010 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 26,500...]

[You have dealt 29,100...]

...

...

[Critical!]

[...The option effect ‘Black Flames’...]

[A red lightning has been summoned...]

[Critical!]



...

...

...

...

[The great hero, Overgeared King Grid has given rest to the heroes and succeeded in cleansing the Behen Archipelago.]

[This will be a long-standing achievement in humanity's history.]

World messages emerged.

“...”

Grid's expression was bitter. Madra's final attitude made Grid's heart feel numb.

# Chapter 692

[A new hero has given peace to the specters of past heroes and has opened the final gate of the Behen Archipelago.]

A world message. It referred to an alert that appeared to all players of Satisfy, regardless of species, affiliation, and level. Why were the contents revealed to all players? It was naturally because the importance was high. The fact that a particular situation emerged as a world message meant that the situation would have a profound influence on the flow of Satisfy.

Until now, the world messages had been seen when the golems invaded the Eternal Kingdom, when Pagma's Descendant appeared, when Sword Saint Kraugel appeared and when Great Demon Belial appeared. Thus, the world paid attention to the protagonist of this world message. Discussions were held all over the world on TV channels.

『First, we should pay attention to the title of hero. A person strong enough for the system to classify as a hero will certainly be a top ranker. They are also likely to have a hidden class.』

『I'm sure that it's a legendary class. That is why they are interpreted as a hero.』

『It might be the case... Every island on the Behen Archipelago has its unique trial. Based on a variety of contexts, the later islands are likely to be guarded by former legends.』

This was the reason why Kraugel, Grid, Agnus, and Ares were mentioned as candidates for the world message. If the system recognized them as a hero, it was likely they had secured a legendary class. The viewers also agreed. 100 out of 100 people thought that Kraugel was the main character of the world message. He had already won the battle against Grid with his normal class. It was everyone's idea that Kraugel was stronger than Grid, Agnus, Ares, etc. after becoming a Sword Saint, the strongest legendary class.

『The power of some of the former legends is comparable to or greater than the great demons. I don't see how they can be beaten unless it is Kraugel.』

『But it will be hard to break through the last gate, even for Kraugel. A legend beyond a great demon will be protecting the last gate.』

『That's right. It doesn't make sense for Kraugel to be able to win against Muller and the other former legends.』

The experts talked incessantly. Without perfect information, they presented their expectations and deceived the viewers. But it didn't last for long.

『...?』

『... 』

The panelists on the broadcasting shows simultaneously looked blank. The staff delivered urgent news. The contents of the news they received was the following world message.

[The great hero, Overgeared King Grid has given rest to the heroes and succeeded in cleansing the Behen Archipelago.]

[This will be a long-standing achievement in humanity's history.]

『Holy shit... 』

An expert suddenly cursed. So what if he guessed enthusiastically?

Grid! Once the Overgeared King was involved, all speculations were wasted! The experts still trembled when thinking about how public confidence was weakened by Grid. Now once again...

The professions in each field were hit by Grid. Indeed.

*-Yes, the next X.*

*-I am surprised to see them getting paid and appearing on TV for every wrong analysis.*

ㅋㅋ

*-Next time I won't believe anything you say.*

The Internet community in each country was already heated up. The experts were ashamed to raise their heads. All except for one person.

[[Kahahat! Hooray God Grid! Hooray South Korea!]]

It was Peak Sword who participated on a Korean TV station as part of a panel of Satisfy professionals.

◇ ◇ ◇

"...Overgeared King, the legend of the new era. I am thankful for you giving me enjoyment at the end. I will give you a reward."

"..."

Madra was stripped of the undefeated title that he had defended for hundreds of years. It was shameful and it wouldn't be strange for him to feel anger. However, Madra thanked Grid rather than feel resentment. Grid was confused for a moment before realizing.

"You... It was really painful."

The former legends had already finished their lives. It was unlikely that they wanted their bodies to be dug up from their graves and resurrected as a worthless undead.

'Of course it would be painful. How hard was it to be trapped on this desolate island for over 100 years after being forcibly resurrected as a skeleton.'

In particular, Madra had human intelligence and wisdom. Being resurrected as a skeleton would be shocking, but to spend more than 100 years alone on a remote island with nothing...

"Rest from now on."

Madra turned to grey ash and was dispersed. Grid bowed deeply to Madra who was returning to the dead. It was an act stemming from respect. Grid envied Madra's strong mentality and combat power.

*Swaaaaah.*

The 66th island started to be cleansed. The somewhat cloudy air cleared and green forests and a lake appeared.

Next.

*Kukukukukung!*

There was an earthquake. Nine pillars rose from the bottom of the earth, centered around the huge lake. No, they were stone statues. There were nine stone statues, each of which were close to 10 meters in size and were carved in elaborate detail.

"Eh? Braham? Pagma?"

Grid was surprised by the rising statues. Two of the nine stone statues looked like Braham and Pagma. Grid was reminded of the original purpose of the Behen Archipelago.

"The Hall of Fame...! These are stone statues of the former legends?"

*-That's right. It was made for people of later generations to honor our achievements.*

"Ohu!"

Grid's face became rosy once Braham confirmed it. The people who were admired as legends, who left outstanding achievements in their field. What did they look like when alive? The curious Grid observed each status in turn. The first one was Pagma.

"Really nice."

Grid had already seen Pagma's appearance through Randy. That's why he knew. He didn't know who the sculptor was, but this stone statue fully reproduced the target. The carved statue of Pagma was just as beautiful as he was.

"The blacksmith who fought for peace in the world..."

It was Pagma who killed Braham for being a demonkin and stole away his life force, despite being close enough to create a new mineral together, as well as signing a contract with 1st Great Demon Baal. He dug up the graves of the former legends and turned them into death knights. To be honest, he felt like a ruthless person. But it was undeniable that he fought for the world.

“...”

Grid looked up at the stone statue of Pagma for a while before bowing deeply.

“Thank you.”

They were heartfelt words. It was thanks to the techniques Pagma left that Grid was able to break away from his pathetic self of the past. He honestly didn't care about what Pagma did. He just felt infinite thanks.

*-It's clear that this sculptor didn't get me.*

On the other hand, Braham was angry when he saw his statue. It was because his appearance carved on the stone statue was far less than the real thing. Grid grinned.

"I understand the position of the sculptor. Braham, it's impossible for even a brilliant sculptor to completely carve your beauty."

He wasn't just flattering Braham. As a vampire, Braham's beauty was transcendent. It was so great that some people in the world thought of it as the ideal appearance.

*-B-Bah. Well, it's natural.*

Braham shrugged. The sculptor carved Braham wearing a robe and holding a staff in his hand, his expression very benign. There was no trace of Braham's arrogance. It was the result of taking away Mumud's achievements. Braham was recognized as a great person who developed magic for humanity.

“This is Madra...”

The third statue that Grid looked at was that of Undefeated King Madra. The stone statue of Madra resembled Grid's imagination. He was a middle-aged man with a warm smile.

*Flop.* Grid sat down out of frustration.

“Why are the people who like me always like this...?”

Like any other player, Grid had dreamt of meeting the elves. He expected a romantic relationship with a beautiful female elf. But in reality, he was liked by a male elf.

“Ha...”

Grid sighed deeply before confirming Sword Saint Muller, Godly Archer Povia, Demon Slayer Alex, Tailor Kruger, and Miner Gis.

Sword Saint Muller was a young man who looked like the protagonist of a manhwa. He had an ambitious expression on his face. Archer Povia was beautiful as a half elf while Alex looked lonely, like a man with a deep wound. The spirit of craftsmanship could be felt from Kruger and Gis’ faces.

“Um...”

Grid’s face gradually became brighter as he looked at the former legends. Now that he thought about it, he was the first player to see the faces of all the former legends. Grid felt proud of himself. It felt like a dream that he was ahead of everyone else after always lagging behind. As if to praise him, the Behen Archipelago’s compensation event finally occurred.

*Kurururung!*

A lake surrounded by nine stone statues. The waves suddenly forming on it grabbed Grid’s attention.

*Puhahahak!*

Something rose from the centre of the lake. It was a new statue. A stone statue of a young man surrounded by four golden hands. Armed with sturdy barbed armor, the man held a hammer in one hand and the Enlightenment Sword in the other.

It was Grid. A stone statue of Grid was erected in the Hall of Fame. It was also in the middle of the lake, watched by the nine former legends!

“Wow...”

Being registered in the Hall of Fame didn't just mean appearing on a list. It meant having a stone statue as well? Grid was thrilled since the effect was much more spectacular than he expected.

'I am standing side by side with the previous legends... '

Grid was caught up in the excitement when notification windows emerged in front of him.

[The Behen Archipelago has successfully been purified.]

[You deserve praise for cleansing the Behen Archipelago, which has been left untouched for many years after the invasion of the great demons ended, and for giving rest to the former legends. Your feat will be recorded forever.]

[Your statue has been built in the Behen Archipelago's Hall of Fame. Statue only buffs have been created.]

[As a reward for cleansing the Behen Archipelago, you have gained five levels!]

[Your challenger points have been filled to the maximum (1 million) in compensation for cleansing the Behen Archipelago.]

[You can now use the Fog Island Store.]

[As a favor to Death Knight Madras, guardian of the 66th island, a special item has been added to Fog Island!]

"Fog Island...!"

It was completely unexpected! Grid's heart thumped.

'The price of one elixir was 250 points?'

Grid had a huge one million points! 400... No, he could buy 4,000 elixirs!



‘In addition, a special item has been added as a favour to Madra?’

It was a tremendous reward. The items that he got from the islands in the 60’s were great, but the compensation for fully cleansing the islands was unthinkable.

“Good! Yes! Yes!! Yahooo!”

Grid jumped with joy. Grid forgot the pains in his body as his vision was covered with fog and a golden carriage appeared. Grid didn’t delay. He ran straight for the goods carriage. His plan was to buy Madra’s special item and then use the rest of the one million points on elixirs.

“Now it is more like the power of stats? Should I change my name to the Stats King? Hahaha!”

Grid was so excited that he was talking to himself like a madman. However, that good atmosphere didn’t last long.

-Fog Island Items List-

[Madra’s Diary]

A diary written by Death Knight Madra himself.

Price: One Million Challenger Points

[East Continent Movement Portal Scroll]

You can go to the starting village of ‘Pangea’ on the East Continent.

Weight: 0.1

Price: 50 Challenger Points

"...???"

Diary...? The special item was just a diary? The price was also one million challenger points?

"And where are the elixirs?"

The only product beside the diary was the portal scroll?

"XX..."

The Hall of Fame. Curses echoed through the sacred place built to honor the feats of former legends. Up until now, Grid had forgotten something from a long time ago. The person who asked him to purify the Behen Archipelago was none other than Sticks.

That's right. This wasn't the only reward for cleansing the Behen Archipelago.

# Chapter 693

“Grid...!”

If Death Knight Madra succeeded in using 300,000 Army Massacre Sword, Grid would've been defeated. However, a death knight's body was weak and Madra failed to use it. In addition, Grid had been lucky that the God's Command passive triggered. It was a dicey battle. Sticks was soaked with sweat as he watched the confrontation through the crystal ball.

“Grid...! I knew you would do it!”

A hero was someone who fell from the heavens. Sage Sticks had some knowledge of astronomy and saw that Grid was protected by Rebecca, goddess of light. He believed that Grid would exceed his capabilities and Grid actually succeeded. Was it simply luck? No. Grid pioneered the way himself.

He rescued the Rebecca Church by defeating the evil pope, earned the favor of Rebecca's Daughters, and set up the correct Pope, causing Rebecca to feel attached to him. Grid moved the hearts of a goddess and thus, was selected by the heavens.

“Truly a great man...”

It was extremely rare that High Elf Sticks would praise a human. He smiled and raised his hot body. The Behen Archipelago had been purified after more than 100 years. Sticks wanted to rush to the 66th island right now and share his joy with Grid. But he was forced to stay in place. It was because he saw that Grid was locked in deep thought.

“...”

Grid showed respect to the departed Madra, admired the statues of the former legends and was thrilled at his own statue appearing next to them. Sticks didn't want to interfere in this time. He wanted the new hero to enjoy it. He waited. Then Fog Island popped up and a golden carriage appeared!

‘Right now!’

Sticks saw Grid approaching the golden carriage and finally entered the 66th island. He hoped that Grid would be even more welcoming due to the good atmosphere.

However.

“XX...”

“...?”

The sacred Hall of Fame. The first word that Sticks heard after entering the completely cleansed 66th island was something that couldn't be spoken.

‘W-What?’

Why had the atmosphere darkened in only a few minutes? Sticks panicked. Grid discovered him and screamed with bloodshot eyes.

“Sticks! Surely you aren't in league with this damn carriage!”

“...”

Ah, the timing was wrong. Sticks sighed as he was reminded of Grid's nature.



"Fog Island and the golden carriage was an arrangement made for the growth of those who challenged the Behen Archipelago. Now that the Behen Archipelago is cleansed, the reason to raise challengers has disappeared. That is probably why items such as the elixirs and books have disappeared."

“Hah... Then why is the only thing left the continental movement scrolls?”

“...An average person would be delighted with the scrolls.”

Sticks was right. This portal scroll that made movement to the East Continent easy was now very rare. Grid had a chance to secure large quantities of it. But the scrolls were insignificant from Grid's position. It was because he had Sticks. Sticks could make the intercontinental portal scrolls so Grid didn't want to waste points buying them.

"I already told you that it takes me a long time to produce the scrolls. You should be happy to buy the scrolls."

"Um... Is it really okay?"

Grid's eye was constantly caught by Madra's diary. At first, he was frustrated and angered by the fact that it was a diary. But when he thought about it, this was Madra's direct reward. The price was also one million points. It couldn't be a normal diary.

Sticks smiled.

"Then buy the diary. Believe in your own choice."

'You are the one who has the love of a goddess.' Sticks swallowed down these words.

He didn't want Grid to fall into pride and complacency.

"Umm... Based on Madra's personality, it is highly unlikely to be a trap."

Grid's worries didn't last long. He knew that a bulk volume of East Continent movement scrolls would be a tremendous boost to the national power of the Overgeared Kingdom if used well.

'But I think the legacy of the Undefeated King is better.'

He acted quickly once he made his decision.

"I will buy Madra's diary!"

At the same time.

[One million challenger points have been consumed to buy Death Knight Madra's Diary.]

Madra's diary entered Grid's inventory. What was the identity of the diary? Grid wanted to open it right away! At this moment, Sticks bowed deeply to him.

"Grid, I am deeply grateful to you for cleansing the Behen Archipelago and the Hall of Fame, which is the succession link between the legends of the old generation and new generation."

[Sage Sticks thanks you for fulfilling his desire for the purification of the Behen Archipelago!]

[Sage Sticks has given you a new title!]

"You are the hero of heroes who put to rest the suffering past heroes (legends). I will call you the Hero King in the future."

[The title 'Hero King' has been obtained.]

[Hero King]

A hero of heroes. You are a living myth.

\* The Hero King shines among the heroes. Deals 10% additional damage to all unique or higher rated classes.

\* The Hero King is in a position to discuss the peace of the world. Deals 15% additional damage to great demons, archangels, dragons, and demigods and reduces damage by 15%.

\* The Hero King is proud. He is conscious of always being the best and is always full of fighting energy.

[Fighting Energy]

A special resource only for the Hero King.

It is usually held at 10 and increases to 100 during combat.

The higher the fighting energy, the higher the stats.

However, caution should be exercised since there is a penalty if fighting energy falls below 10.

*Chwarururuk!*

Once the Hero King title was acquired, the fighting energy resource bar was added to the health and mana bar in Grid's status window. A translucent purple aura started to rise like a haze from Grid's whole body. It was the appearance of fighting energy in reality.

"Ohh!"

Sticks felt admiration. It was because Grid was radiating a fierce but solemn energy. On the other hand, Grid was surprisingly unexcited about receiving a unique effect among two billion users. His expression was uncomfortable. He was reminded of the 'coolness' option attached to Iyarugt. He felt uncomfortable when he thought about when the money eating alchemy facility would start being useful. But after a moment.

*Twitch twitch.*

The ends of Grid's mouth started curving up. Grid wanted to dance, no matter how ugly it looked. He was the only one among two billion users to be surrounded by purple energy!

'I will stand out even in a crowd of two billion?'

It was a unique effect. He really felt like a special person. But there was a problem.

'So what if they look? The face is ugly.'

Grid still had no confidence in his appearance. The heart that was pleased for a moment soon became frustrated. Sticks became uneasy as he watched Grid.

'Did he go crazy after being cursed by the former legends?'

It wasn't strange that he would think so when Grid repeatedly switched between smiling happily to looking frustrated. Then another world message emerged.

[Overgeared King Grid, who gave rest to the heroes of past generations, has been recognized as the hero of heroes. It is the birth of Hero King Grid who will go beyond history and lead to myths.]

On the other hand.

*-That abominable elf...*

Braham felt hostile to Sticks. The two people had always disliked each other due to the bad relationship between demonkin and elves, but now the hostility was incomparably greater. There was a reason. The title of Hero King, it came from Sword Saint Muller.

*-Making Grid carry on Muller's responsibilities... I will stop it even if I am resurrected in hell.*

◇ ◇ ◇

[...It is the birth of Hero King Grid who will go beyond history and lead to myths.]

"What?"

At the entrance to the Behen Archipelago. The reporters gathered like ants were amazed. A world message appeared once again and the protagonist was also Grid.

"A-A scoop!"

Hero of heroes? Myth was mentioned? The stimulating sentences stirred the blood of the reporters.

"Logout!"



“I will also logout!”

The reporters waiting for Grid to emerge from the Behen Archipelago started to disappear one by one. The first thing they did after logging out was to write an article. The titles of the articles were stimulating.

[Hero of heroes! Hero King Grid is born! Does this suggest the emergence of a myth class?]

[Kraugel is no longer unique.]

[(Column) Hero of heroes, reaching above the sky.]

And so on. Articles relating to grid poured in online and offline around the world. Broadcasting stations held live debates on the topic of Grid.

“Kik... Kikik, I can’t help but acknowledge him.”

The main character of the world message was Grid, not Kraugel? Agnus was initially shocked, but soon accepted reality. The Grid that he encountered was strong. There was no reason to deny it.

“But.”

What was Kraugel doing?

“He... He isn’t falling down, is he?”

Of course, Agnus himself knew. It was an impossible thought. The sky would never fall.

At the same time, South Korea.

"Oh my, this time your son has become the hero king?"

“First he was a king, then the Overgeared King and now the Hero King? He truly is great.”

“Ah, these people. Absolutely zero sense. Youngwoo is his name so he is King Youngwoo.”

“...”

The parents of Shin Youngwoo (Grid) were still operating a vegetable store. The two people left the fields early in the morning were constantly bombarded with congratulations from the people living near the fields. There were constant calls from relatives.

*-Uncle! Please tell Youngwoo hyung my words! I will drop out of school so please let me join the Overgeared Guild! I will work hard to level up! Yes?*

*-Oh my, Youngmo. Do you remember when I repeatedly told you that your son would do well? My daughter who has become a stewardess is a real beauty. Speak to Youngwoo and have him arrange for her to join Overgeared. Yes? What does this have to do with Inyoung? Help her connect with someone higher! My daughter is pretty!*

“...”

A person should be successful. The attitude of people towards their son had completely changed from the past. They were so proud, then what about Youngwoo's parents? Youngwoo's parents were extremely happy and proud.

“Honey! We play games... No, let's do a lot of volunteer work on behalf of our son who is busy!”

"Yes, the cabbages this time are very good. I want to donate them."

"Yes, donations should always be in Youngwoo's name."

Thanks to their child, Youngwoo's parents could always be cheerful. They were grateful that their son did his best, despite them not being able to do anything. They wanted all the children of the world to be as good as Youngwoo.

# Chapter 694

“Hero King...!”

It was a great title from the name alone! Looking at the description, it was likely to be a unique title, just like the First King.

‘It was worth going through all this trouble to cleanse the Behen Archipelago!’

Getting rewards for suffering seemed natural, but it wasn’t always true. It was easy to realize when looking at all the office workers. They worked hard for the company, while the company didn’t give them reasonable compensation. Unfortunately, most of the people living in the world were slaves of this irrationality.

Then what about Satisfy’s players? Those who worked hard to level up would get rewards from clearing quests and steadily progress. Among them, the forerunner who developed in a positive direction was Grid.

“...”

Grid was covered with the haze of the fighting energy. He was filled with joy as he grasped the details of the Hero King title.

‘On the surface, it’s much less effective than the First King title.’

It added additional damage to unique rated or higher classes, as well as great demons, archangels, dragons, demigods, etc. The listed beings seemed special, but it was actually a title that exerted an effect in extreme conditions. In normal times, the only function was the resource called ‘fighting energy.’

‘On the other hand, the First King always shows a great power.’

Hero King. Why did he put this title on par with First King?

‘It’s natural.’

Not everything was visible at first glance. Grid looked at the details of ‘Fighting

Energy.’

[Fighting Energy]

A special resource only for the Hero King.

...

...

Every time fighting energy increased by one point, his strength, stamina and agility increased by 0.5%.

“...It’s huge.”

Fighting energy was usually kept at 10 and would increase up to 100 in combat. In other words, Grid would always receive a 5% increase in strength, stamina, and agility, and in some cases it would go up to 50%.

‘It’s almost crazy.’

This was especially favorable to Grid who had high stats. What if Grid’s 3,500 points in strength increased by 50%? It was 5,250. It was a figure that could only be obtained if Grid gained 200 more levels and invested all the points into strength.

‘I’m concerned about the penalty that will occur when fighting energy falls below 10.’

Normally, fighting energy remained at 10 points. Grid judged that it wouldn’t fall below 10 unless there was a shameful situation.

“Kukukuk...!”

Grid couldn’t endure the laughter that bubbled up after he realized the true value of Hero King. He paid attention to the fact that this wasn’t the end of the Behen Archipelago’s rewards.

‘There are still the statue buffs and Madra’s diary!’

A stone statue of Grid in the center of the Hall of Fame! In the future, Grid would gain buffs from it. What were the buffs? The excited Grid immediately approached his stone statue. Then he frowned. It was because his stone statue was carved exactly like his appearance.

“...It’s sadly ugly.”

Why was the ugliest face decorating the center of the Hall of Fame? Wasn’t this completely shameful? He was embarrassed when he thought of the two billion users and NPCs of Satisfy who would laugh every time they saw his statue. Sticks and Braham couldn’t understand Grid’s frustration. When they looked at it objectively, Grid’s appearance was quite average for humans. However, Grid’s self-esteem was so battered after the incident with Ahyoung that he wasn’t aware of it himself.

“Hah... What should I do to get the buffs?”

Grid gave a deep sigh and touched the stone statue.

*Ttiring~*

There was a lively sound effect and the details of the stone statue came up.

[Statue of Hero King Grid Lv 1]

A stone statue commemorating the feats of the hero of heroes, the legendary blacksmith Grid who gave rest to all the legends who became death knights and cleansed the Behen Archipelago.

If you pay homage to the stone statue, your dexterity will increase by 5% and the probability of making a higher rated item will increase slightly. In addition, the speed of sword type attack skills will increase by 2%.

\* Every time a player or NPC pays homage to the statue, the ‘Statue’s Worship’ will increase by 1.

\*Every time the ‘Statue’s Worship’ value exceeds 5,000, the level of the statue will

increase by 1 and the buff effect increases. Sometimes a new buff effect will also open. The maximum level of the stone statue is 15.

\* You can only worship a statue once every three days and the duration of the buffs is two days. In addition, the stone statue buffs can't be overlapped.

\* The protagonist of the stone statue, 'Grid' will receive the statue buffs for 10 days every time the Statue's Worship increases by 1,000.

Current Statue's Worship: 0

"...Wow."

Dexterity increased by 5%, sword type attack skills by 2%, and there was a light increase in the probability of making higher rated items? It was a very useful buff for Grid. In particular, the ability to acquire 10 days worth of buffs every time the Statue's Worship value increased by 1,000 was extremely attractive to Grid.

'Maybe?'

Considering the fact that Satisfy had two billion users, couldn't he maintain an infinite statue buffs?

*Dugun dugun!*

Grid's heart thumped. He was delighted that the statues weren't merely a symbol and that they gave him an advantage beyond his imagination. But there was something he had to check first.

"Sticks, can people easily access the Hall of Fame?"

So what if there were the stone statues? It would be useless if it was hard for the players to come here.

Sticks smiled at the concerned Grid.

"They can. Originally, the entrance to the Behen Archipelago was scattered all throughout the continent. I sealed it in consideration of the danger once it became

contaminated, but now there is no more need. In the future, many people will visit the Hall of Fame.”

“Ohhh!”

Grid had goosebumps at the thought of his Statue’s Worship increasing rapidly.

“Wait...”

There was the phrase ‘statue buffs can’t be overlapped.’ Grid frowned before standing in front of the statues of other legends.

[Statue of Sword Saint Muller Lv. 1]

A stone statue commemorating the feats of Muller, the strongest Sword Saint of the past who sealed many great demons saved the world.

If you pay homage to the statue, your strength stat will increase by 7% and the power of your sword type skills will increase by 10%.

\* Every time a player or NPC pays homage to the statue, the ‘Statue’s Worship’ will increase by 1.

\*Every time the ‘Statue’s Worship’ value exceeds 5,000, the level of the statue will increase by 1 and the buff effect increases. The maximum level of the stone statue is 10.

\* You can only worship a statue once every three days and the duration of the buffs is two days. In addition, the stone statue buffs can’t be overlapped.

Current Statue’s Worship: 0

“ ... ”

## [Statue of the Legendary Blacksmith Pagma]

A statue commemorating the feat of the legendary blacksmith Pagma, who contracted with the 1st Great Demon Baal for the sake of humanity.

If you pay homage to the stone statue, your dexterity will increase by 7% and the probability of making a higher rated item will increase slightly. In addition, the speed of sword type skills will increase by 2% and the undead summoning skill's mana cost is reduced by 3%.

\* Every time a player or NPC pays homage to the statue, the 'Statue's Worship' will increase by 1...

...

...

Current Statue's Worship: 0

"No, dammit!"

Grid cursed once he confirmed that the other legendary statues gave buffs. His buffs were the worst so he would be a saint if he didn't swear.

"Doesn't this mean no one will worship my stone statue?"

The infinite stone statue buffs had disappeared! To Grid's dismay, his stone statue was just a symbol. It seemed that the worship value would be maintained at 0 for the rest of his life.

"Wow, really XX... I feel like crying... Won't people laugh at my statue every time they come here? It's ugly and useless."

There was no god in the world. Grid was terribly frustrated. He had forgotten something. The fact that there was Lael, a more useful person than God, beside him.



"Are you now calm?"

After checking the stone statue buffs, Grid was paralyzed for a few minutes. His ugly stone statue was built in the center of the Hall of Fame and the buffs were useless. Grid's mental state collapsed at the thought of it becoming a mockery in the future. He had been so proud about having a stone statue in the Hall of Fame and now he wanted to hide it in a mouse hole. But it was only for a moment.

Grid's mental state recovered relatively quickly. It was because the weight of the burden he carried was too heavy.

"Yes... I can't space out when I have to return to the kingdom."

The Overgeared Kingdom was still under pressure from the empire. As the king, Grid couldn't be absent forever.

'I will go back to the palace and check Madra's diary...'

If even the diary turned out to be 'garbage' then Grid wouldn't be able to cope with the mental trauma. Therefore, he wanted to return to the kingdom first to calm his heart.

"Let's go back."

Grid signalled to Sticks.

Then Sticks said to him, "Before that, let's hear from the field of succession."

"Field of succession?"

"Didn't I tell you? The Behen Archipelago is the Hall of Fame that honors the achievements of past legends, while also handing down legacies to the current legends.

"Ah...!" Grid's expectations rose as he heard the word 'legacy.' "I might inherit the legacy left behind by Pagma?"

"That's right."

"Okay, let's go."



The field of succession located on the 65th island.

"It is a place where no one apart from present legends can enter."

The field of succession was covered in gold. There were nine elegant buildings, like shrines, erected and Grid and Sticks stood in the center. They naturally found the building for the 'Legendary Blacksmith's Succession.' Of the nine buildings, there was one with a hammer and anvil engraved on top of the entrance.

'What has been left?'

Grid questioned and entered the building.

[You have been admitted to the 'Legendary Blacksmith's Succession' as Pagma's Descendant.]

[Welcome! Pagma's Rare Book (2) is waiting for you!]

Inside the enormous building. There was a book at the end of dozens of pillars. It was similar to the book that Grid obtained from the North End Cave.

"Gulp."

What was contained in the book? The tense Grid gulped. He was trying not to expect too much.

'This is a place where you can enter as long as you have a legendary class.'

Nothing special would be gained from here. It would be a minor skill. He didn't set his expectations high in order to not be disappointed. Grid thought this many times before touching Pagma's Rare Book.

[You have acquired Pagma's Descendant Hidden Piece 'Granting an Ego'.]

[Granting an Ego]

You can give the target item an ego.

It will be classified as an ego item and the value will be astronomical.

The amount of times it was possible to use Granting an Ego increases by one every time the skill level of the Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship skill increases.

Current number of egos that can be given: 8/8

"Ego item...!"

This technique wasn't just for dwarven blacksmiths? Grid trembled in amazement from the new ability. The impact and loss felt after checking the buffs of the stone statue had already been erased.

# Chapter 695

『As Grid and the Behen Archipelago is becoming a hot topic, the S.A. Group has announced the new rules for the 3rd National Competition.』

『It was a shocking announcement. Thanks to this, interest in Grid has been dispersed.』

『This is a conspiracy, a conspiracy! The new rules released are too disadvantageous to South Korea! This is a blatant shot at South Korea! The S.A. Group deserves criticism at a national level!!』

The Haenam branch of Eat Spicy Jokbal.

Peak Sword frowned as he chewed on jokbal. He was angry due to the news report.

"Those traitorous S.A... The national competition is in three months and they want to add such rules?"

The Olympics, which had long been a festival of the world, were completely different from when it was first held hundreds of years ago. From the current point of view, the first one had bizarre events and rules. But over the years, know-how was accumulated and the Olympics applied fair rules that were close to perfection. Yes, it meant that the Satisfy National Competition would one day have a complete system like the Olympics. However, the current system was still incomplete.

The basic rules were changed every year, causing confusion among participants and viewers.

The 1st National Competition had been limited to 17 participating countries and the players of each country were obliged to participate in three events.

On the other hand, the 2nd National Competition was extended to 32 participating countries and the players of each country could participate in three individual events and three group events, for a total of six events.

Now the 3rd National Competition scheduled in three months would be expanded to 50 participating countries and each player was only allowed to take part in two events,

whether it was a solo or group event.

The problem wasn't the increased number of participating countries. The increase in countries meant the recognition of the National Competition had risen and the gap between players for each country had narrowed, which was rather positive. The problem was that each individual could only participate in two events.

In the future, the first place was likely to be the U.S. which had the widest player pool. The country that suffered the most damage was undoubtedly South Korea. Why? It was easy when thinking about the reason why South Korea was able to overturn everyone's expectations and achieve top results in the 1st National Competition and 2nd National Competition.

It was only thanks to the activities of Grid. Grid secured a large amount of gold medals and raised South Korea's ranking exponentially. Now that was impossible. No matter how good Grid was, he would eventually only get two gold medals. South Korea relied on the lone Grid and it was impossible to dream about becoming the top ranked country.

"The number of events has even increased to 20... Sigh."

Peak Sword sighed. He brought up the conspiracy theories that the majority of people had.

"It seems to be true that the S.A. Group has received funding from the United States. They want the reputation of being the strongest country in Satisfy and are threatened by our country, so they have revised the rules."

"Isn't it South Korea who has only relied on Grid in the first place? Can't you win a gold medal without Grid? What is different if you don't qualify for the gold medal? Even if South Korea stays in the lower rankings, it can only blame itself. There is no reason to blame anyone else."

Eat Spicy Jokbal said while making makguksu. In fact, Eat Spicy Jokbal's words were right. Looking at it objectively, South Korea was unusual since it ranked high due to Grid. In fact, criticism had sprung up which was why the rules of the 3rd National Competition had been changed. However, Peak Sword refuted it.

"It definitely is sad to rely on only one person. But isn't it funny for the organizer to change the rules just to keep one person in check? Think about it. Brazil, Germany,

Italy and Argentina are good at soccer and keep winning the World Cup. Have they ever had rules against them?"

"...No, soccer is different."

Eat Spicy Jokbal clicked his tongue when Peak Sword came up with an absurd example. But Peak Sword didn't care and continued the claim.

"On the other hand, what about Taekwondo and E-sports? South Korea won medals in various competitions and they adopted rules to keep South Korea in check! This is really reasonable!! The whole world is bullying South Korea!"

"..."

Eat Spicy Jokbal was a Korean after all. He didn't agree 100% with Peak Sword's claim, but he could empathize to some extent. But what could they do? Everyone blamed South Korea and felt resentment for their ranking in the previous two National Competitions. There wasn't a single country who felt it was fair when they saw South Korea securing a large number of gold medals thanks to Grid. If the National Competition continued to be dominated by Grid, it would lose credibility and become a minor contest.

"Peak Sword, you should understand this part. Would you be able to speak like this if you aren't Korean?"

"..."

"The scale of the Satisfy National Competition is big, but it's still a new competition. Anything that feels unreasonable right now will eventually become a foothold for the future. Over the years, it will eventually develop into a competition where everyone will be satisfied."

Eat Spicy Jokbal had organized and operated Blood Carnival to fulfill his own desires. Considering his basic tendencies, these lines didn't fit him. However, Eat Spicy Jokbal was changing. It was a phenomenon that occurred as a result of getting close to Peak Sword who came every week. Eat Spicy Jokbal, who was only interested in his own growth in the game, was now comforting Peak Sword. He was being grabbed by Peak Sword's warm personality.

"Stop being upset and drink more soju."

Eat Spicy Jokbal filled up Peak Sword's empty glass of soju. Peak Sword drank it and revealed his true feelings.

"Eat Spicy Jokbal, I dislike people like you. People think that South Korea is a country weak in Satisfy but what is the reality? I heard rumors that there are many South Koreans among the unofficial rankers. One of them is right here, Eat Spicy Jokbal."

"..."

"If you gamers who hide in the shadows for the sake of personal gain actually fought for South Korea, then nobody would think this. South Korea could be recognized as a great power in Satisfy like the United States or Canada. Everyone in South Korea could be proud. But what is the reality? Among the players, Yura and Grid are the only ones fighting for South Korea with pure intentions."

Peak Sword was also blaming himself for not participating in the 1st National Competition. Why hadn't he taken part in the 1st National Competition? He was afraid that he would have to disclose all his skills to the world and tricked himself, saying "Nothing will change even if I participate in the competition."

On the other hand, Grid and Yura took a penalty and committed to the country. This was Peak Sword's subjective interpretation. In particular, he was still shocked when he thought of the scene where Grid, who was close to obscurity, appeared in the 1st National Competition and revealed his talents.

"I hope you won't regret it like me... Participate in the 3rd National Competition and let the world know that Grid and Yura aren't the only talents in South Korea. How exciting would it be if we can prove that even changing the rules won't push down South Korea!!"

Peak Sword had already eaten more than half the jokbal. First he asked for makguksu as a service and now he was making this request of Eat Spicy Jokbal.

"Didn't you approach me to get me to join Overgeared? Now you are telling me to fight for South Korea. I don't know what you want."

It was a criticism telling Peak Sword not to forget his original intentions. After Peak Sword came every week, Eat Spicy Jokbal thought of him more as a drinking companion than an Overgeared member. Of course, it was a miscalculation. Peak Sword hadn't forgotten. He was just greedy.

"If you join the Overgeared Guild, the Overgeared Guild will be abundant. If you participate in the National Competition, South Korea will be abundant. I want both."

"In the end, you want everything? Aren't you being too greedy?"

"Of course I won't push you. I don't have the right to do that. The choice is yours. No matter the choice, I still want you to be my drinking buddy. Your jokbal is delicious."

"Hmmm..."

Eat Spicy Jokbal filled Peak Sword's glass again. His ability to make dungeons could be used in various fields and he was the best talent that had the title of 'conditional' strongest alongside Yura, Katz, and Seuron. Now he was locked in deep thoughts.



"Hero King~ Hero King ~~ lululu~~Ego sword producer ~~~ lulalulua~~~"

"..."

Really, Grid was a person with a lot of emotional ups and downs. The man who had been holding his head in frustration a few minutes ago was now dancing around the room and singing. Question marks appeared above Sticks' head as he watched Grid.

'It's amazing that he can show such extreme concentration in battle when he has this personality.'

By default, a person needed to be self-controlled in order to show high concentration. But the usual Grid seemed like an innocent child. It was questionable how such a person could control himself and show high concentration.

'He must try harder than others... '

He came up to his present place despite his lacking talent because he worked hard. Sticks laughed and used Mass Teleport.



“A letter came from Lubana.”

“It’s finally here.”

The capital of the Overgeared Kingdom, Reinhardt.

Lauel looked up from where he had been buried in a pile of documents. The sender of the letter that the soldier held was stated to be the ‘descendant of the Undefeated King.’ Lauel could easily infer the contents of the letter.

‘He is asking to cooperate in the war.’

It was the right answer. The person who claimed himself to be the descendant of the Undefeated King and caused a rebellion in Lubana hoped that the Overgeared troops would move while the empire was concentrating its forces on Lubana. The rumor that the relationship between the Overgeared Kingdom and the empire wasn’t good was already spreading and the descendant believed it would be a good proposition for Overgeared.

“But why should we do this?”

The request of the descendant was to attack the rear of the empire and disperse their gaze. Lauel had no intention of accepting this. There was no way of knowing exactly who the descendant of the Undefeated King was and the situation in Lubana. The risk was too great to stand on their side.

"I thought he would give a bit of information about himself in the letter, but he hid it until the end."

Lauel confirmed the contents of the disappointing letter and put it in a corner of his inventory.

*Pahat!*

There was a flash of light in the center of the office and Sticks and Grid appeared.

“Ah! How surprising!”

Two people suddenly appeared in a quiet room. Lael would be dull if he didn't feel surprised. The startled Lael fell back. Grid approached him and extended a big hand.

"Isn't this too over the top? What will the Overgeared Kingdom do if a high ranker has such a poor body?"

"...I don't dare be called a high ranker in front of someone who is ranked third on the unified rankings."

Tears poured from Lael's eyes as he clasped Grid's callused hands. Grid had only been at the Behen Archipelago for 10 days, but Lael felt like he was seeing Grid after a very long time. It was natural. Grid had completely changed in these 10 days. He had gained close to 10 levels, his expression had matured further and the red energy around his body gave off a transcendental energy. It felt like Grid came back a completely different person.

"What a wonderful aura... Have you finally recovered some of the power that was sealed in a previous life?"

"Hahaha, I'm glad to hear your chuuni words after such a long time."

Grid also felt like it had been a long time since he saw Lael. It was because he experienced many things on the Behen Archipelago. Looking back at what happened on the Behen Archipelago, it felt like it took place over several months rather than days.

"Are you going to see Queen Irene?"

After a brief greeting, Grid immediately opened the office door.

"No, I'm going to the library."

Grid waved a shabby looking booklet.

"Eh? Huh? Library??"

Lael doubted his ears. It was because the space called the library didn't suit Grid at all. Lael had never once seen or heard of Grid using the library.

"..."

What was so urgent that Grid had to leave immediately? Then Lael asked Sticks, who was puzzled about why he had to teleport into someone's office.

"Is His Majesty okay? Did he perhaps hit his head?"

" ... "

So it was unusual to read a book. Sticks felt pity that Grid was misunderstood as having a head injury just for going to study.

# Chapter 696

"Anyone who knows the joy of reading has a way to face the disaster."

Just as there was a phrase like this, reading in Satisfy was also classified as a valuable hobby. Players were able to accumulate new knowledge through reading and enjoy the synergistic effect of various stats based on this. Occasionally, they could get quests and skills by following the clues in books. Even if they couldn't get anything, they were able to be absorbed in the joy of the moment. Therefore, reading was an absolute benefit.

In particular, Satisfy boasted a vast worldview and the amount of books it possessed was tremendous. Even the protagonist of the rumor that 'there is a madman who only reads books whenever he connects to Satisfy' had only read a fraction of Satisfy's books.

Of course, this story was far from Grid. From the standpoint of Grid whose comprehension was less than ordinary people, reading was a hobby not for him and he naturally kept away from books. But now.

[Death Knight Madra's Diary]

"..."

A royal study room located in the Overgeared Palace. Grid sat where Irene and Lord normally did and faced a book.

'How long has it been since I read a book?'

It was last year, when he read the instructions for the diamond class capsule that he received from the Comet Group.

"Umm... The contents of the diary can't be as difficult."

Grid didn't know that it was rare for anyone to read a manual from the first chapter to last chapter in detail. His obsession with his lack of talent caused him to finish reading the book all the way to the end. He perceived reading as 'labor' and was nervous

despite this not being an educational book.

“Sigh, okay.”

Grid took a deep breath and controlled his mind. It was a process to maintain his concentration until he finished reading Madra’s diary.

‘Well, it is unlikely I will get something because it is just a diary. I need to work hard.’

Grid’s expectations for the diary were surprisingly small despite purchasing it for one million challenger points. There was a basis. He couldn’t forget that one word would make things different. The diary that Grid obtained from the Behen Archipelago was precisely the diary of Death Knight Madra.

It wasn't Undefeated King Madra. In other words, it was a diary written after Madra was resurrected as a death knight, not when he was living. It was realistic not to expect something special from the diary created by Madra who had been trapped on the island for over 100 years after becoming a death knight.

*Flap.*

Finally.

Grid opened the first chapter of Madra’s diary. At the same time, Grid wasn’t seeing sentences written in the diary. His eyes naturally closed and what followed was the gaze, sensation, and emotions of someone else.

“Kuk...!”

An indirect experience item. This was the identity of Death Knight Madra’s diary. As soon as the diary was opened, Grid became Madra.



The first chapter.

Once I opened my eyes again, the most amazing thing was that I couldn’t feel my own breathing. I realized that I wasn’t alive. Yes, I died. Then how did I open my eyes again? It was confusing.

...Confusing? I feel confusion? Did the cognitive power of the Undefeated King Madra decline to this level?

It was weird. Perhaps I was wandering in my dreams? From the beginning, I wasn't dead. It was just a long nightmare. No.

*Rattle.*

...This was the awful reality. I tried to put my hand on my forehead and witnessed it. My body, it was just bones. The red blood that always boiled hot, the muscles that were never cut, the flesh and skin... Everything was stripped and gone.

Ah, the memories. I died. I was murdered by my own flesh and blood and given to the beasts of Saharan. Huh, whose head was this? Everything was unfamiliar. An empty goal that couldn't contain the total amount of memories flooding back like a tsunami. It took too much time to think. I couldn't get away from the strange sense of confusion.

*Step.*

The source of the current situation appeared. The man with the feminine face. I knew him. I remember the man with the cold eyes that wasn't suitable to be called Duke of Fire.

"P... agma..."

I barely managed to open my mouth and my voice was a deep roar that echoed. It was an uncomfortable voice to hear. I felt uncomfortable and the Duke of Fire bowed deeply.

"Undefeated King, sacrifice yourself for the peace of the world."

◇ ◇ ◇

"...Ugh!"

The moment the first chapter in the diary ended. Grid's mind returned to reality. The confusion, anger, resentment, and sorrow felt by Madra after he was resurrected as a death knight. Grid experienced all these gloomy emotions from Madra's position. The mental shock he received was too big to bear. His whole body was sweating as he

looked around with trembling eyes.

“Kuooock... Kuhuk!”

*Flop!*

Grid fell to the ground from the chair and couldn't help shedding tears. He was cursed by the people he protected his whole life, stabbed in the heart by his son, his head cut off and his decaying corpse fell into a bleak desert without entering a coffin. Then when he opened his eyes again, he was a skeleton. Despair led to nothing but more despair.

“Pant... Pant...”

Was he Grid or was he Madra? The terrible confusion that filled Grid after experiencing Madra's memory seemed to last forever. He wiped at the tears that kept falling and breathed roughly, his face distorted with pain. His field of view was blinking red.

[★ Warning ★ You have assimilated with Madra in the diary and shared his memories and feelings. You need to be careful because you are psychologically feeling a great amount of anxiety and pain.]

[You are in extreme confusion.]

[The system is checking your brain waves and pulse. If it is determined to be dangerous, Death Knight Madra's diary will be sealed.]

"Ku... no!"

Immersive virtual reality often put the player at risk. For example, the first meeting with Huroi a long time ago. The warning message from the system wasn't unfamiliar because Grid strongly remembered what happened that day. This wasn't exaggerated and Grid was scared.

But he didn't give in. Grid intended to receive what Madra left behind. The tears

stopped as he started to distinguish reality from virtual reality. He was aware that he wasn't Madra, but Grid, and Shin Youngwoo before he was Grid.

*Duguen! Duguen! Duguen...*

His crazily beating heart started to stabilize.

[You are free from the confusion.]

[Your vitals have returned to normal. The second chapter of Death Knight Madra's diary is unfolding.]

[Do you want to read it?]

"Of course...!"

Grid's fear hadn't gone away yet. He was already trembling at the thought of experiencing Madra's point of view again. But when faced with trials, Grid knew better than anyone that grumbling and giving up because of fear would be a lifelong regret. Grid opened the second chapter of Madra's diary.



The second chapter.

"Undefeated King, sacrifice yourself for the peace of the world."

White skin contrasted with long black hair. The long and narrow eyes were cold. The legendary blacksmith, the Duke of Fire was bowing his head to Madra. Then Grid was Madra.

"You want me to sacrifice myself?"

It was very unpleasant. Regardless of will, I was being forced to sacrifice myself immediately after being resurrected as an undead. Anxiety and fear boiled up from deep inside. This was before I heard any explanation.



"It has been a long time since I felt such anger."

I intuitively sensed that the current Duke of Fire was a target to be hated. He managed to stir up a body made entirely of bones. Strange. But I definitely realized. This was my burden of the present.

"The situation... You should first explain more."

The person who resurrected me must be the Duke of Fire. I wanted to kill him right now, but I couldn't. Why? He must've resurrected me for some reason. I had to know what sacrifice he was talking about. The answer was absurd.

"The great demons are invading this place, the Behen Archipelago. As you know, the Behen Archipelago is the succession place and the Hall of Fame. If this falls into the hands of the great demons, there is no future for humanity. You must protect it."

"The future of humanity..."

It wasn't a problem for me to discuss. I was only responsible for the future of my people. Aside from that, I had no interest. That's why I became more angry.

"...I see. This is why you are keeping me here and resurrected me as an undead? How trivial! How scandalous! How dare you deprive me of my burden! You deserve to die a hundred times!!"



"Kuock!"

The moment Madra roared angrily and drew his sword.

Grid was returned back to reality. It was the end of the second indirect experience. Grid's fingers were shaking. He was afraid. The feeling when he pulled out a sword with a hand only made of bones came back with him, completely frightening him.

'So vivid.'

He wanted to avoid becoming an undead. The moment he gulped.

[At present, you can't reproduce Madra's swordsmanship with your abilities. You can't read the second chapter of the diary to the end.]

"...?"

A notification window popped up.

[In order to read the second chapter of the diary, you need to learn Madra's swordsmanship.]

[Swordsmanship Textbook: 100,000 Army Swordsmanship has been acquired.]

[Death Knight Madra's diary is sealed until you learn 100,000 Army Swordsmanship.]

"What?"

Madra's swordsmanship book? It was a reward he couldn't even imagine!

'This is just from reading the second chapter of the diary!'

The astonished Grid confirmed the swordsmanship book.

[Swordsmanship Textbook: 100,000 Army Swordsmanship]

Rating: Legendary

A textbook recording the basics of Madra's swordsmanship. However, it records the swordsmanship used after Madra became a death knight, so the contents are weak compared to the original.

There are only two swordsmanship techniques recorded. 100,000 Army Blockade Sword (Degraded) and 100,000 Army Massacre Sword (Degraded).

Learning Conditions: Those who have been recognized by Madra.

“Madra...!”

Grid’s blood was boiling. He became hostile to Pagma in the diary, but he didn’t care. He was thrilled that an overwhelmingly strong man had acknowledged him.

“The legacy you left... I’m going to use it for the rest of my life.”

Grid had always been anxious since witnessing the power of Sword Saint Kraugel during the Great Demon Belial raid. Kraugel split the world despite his level still being low. Grid realized that he needed to continue to grow, grow, and grow in order to keep up with Kraugel.

Now he got a new opportunity. It was extremely valuable. Grid silently closed Madra’s old diary and was resolved.

“The greatness of the Undefeated King, I will announce it to the world.”

The true swordsmanship of the Undefeated King was a natural step for the descendant of the Undefeated King. But Grid had a hunch that he would at least be able to maintain the Undefeated King’s will.

At the same time, the Saharan Empire’s territory of Lubana.

“This is the Undefeated King’s descendant? How boring.”

Mercedes became angry as she arrived at the scene of the army fighting the rebels. Her blue eyes were focused on a man in majestic armor surrounded by knights and soldiers. The few weeks of struggle against the empire’s regular army was an achievement that would go in history, but that was it. In the end, it wasn't enough to change history.

“In the first place, the Undefeated King is nothing. History was just exaggerating.”

Mercedes’ ridicule permeated the ground. It was as if she was mocking Madra in the grave.

# Chapter 697

Grid got a textbook containing the swordsmanship of the Undefeated King! He was impressed by the fact that 100,000 Army Swordsmanship was classified as a legendary skill.

'It's legendary despite being a degraded version... '

100,000 Army Swordsmanship was also just the 'basic swordsmanship' of Undefeated King Madra. Braham said that Madra's true value was exerted from at least 500,000 Army Swordsmanship.

'The more I know about the past legends, the greater they become.'

Grid recalled when he first assimilated with Braham. Braham used Mana Drain the Sky and forcibly absorbed all the mana from nature. From that time, Grid realized that the current legends weren't comparable to the previous generation. Even Piaro, one of the strongest people of the present time, wouldn't be able to withstand a fireball from Braham in his prime.

"...That's why it's interesting."

Satisfy was still in the early stages of its story and it meant there was room for further growth. Grid's motivation shot up.

'Let's catch up with the former legends.'

No, he would surpass them. Kraugel's goal was the same. There was no need to delay. Grid was filled with large ambitions as he opened the textbook for 100,000 Swordsmanship. At the same time.

[You are attempting to learn a new swordsmanship technique, 100,000 Army Swordsmanship (Degraded).]

[You are someone who has received the recognition of the Undefeated King. You have

already achieved the learning condition of 100,000 Army Swordsmanship.]

[Congratulations! You have succeeded in acquiring the 100,000 Army Blockade Sword (Degraded) and 100,000 Army Massacre Sword (Degraded)!]

[The new skill information can be found in the skills list.]

“Good!”

Grid immediately opened the skills window. 100,000 Army Massacre Sword sent out 40 attacks per second over a wide range. It was obviously a superior version of Link, so Grid wanted to try it quickly. However.

[100,000 Army Blockade Sword (Degraded) Lv. 1]

It deals 20% damage to all enemies visible in your field of view and deals 3 seconds of the ‘blockade’ effect. The targets that are blocked can’t move and their use of skills and magic is blocked.

Skill Resource Consumption: 5,000 mana, 20 sword energy.

Skill Cooldown Time: 30 minutes.

\* The skill isn’t activated. You must acquire the sword energy resource to activate the skill.

[100,000 Army Massacre Sword (Degraded) Lv. 1]

Deals 60% of your attack power 30 times to everyone (can’t distinguish between friend or foe) in a 10 meter radius.

Skill Resource Consumption: 8,000 mana, 50 sword energy.

Skill Cooldown Time: 10 minutes.

\* The skill isn't activated. You must acquire the sword energy resource to activate the skill.

"What's sword energy?"

It said it was possible to learn it, but not how. He had an illusion of the system message moving in front of him.

"...No, is this a joke?"

He couldn't use a skill that he won in a fair fight after being acknowledged by the opponent?

"Are you kidding me?"

Grid denied reality. He got up and left the study. He headed through the wide corridor towards the palace garden.

"Kyaaak! The Overgeared King!"

"Ohhh! The Overgeared King!"

The maids and gardeners in the garden cheered when they saw Grid. They were glad to have the good fortune of welcoming the world's most respected king. They held their breaths as Grid pulled out a gorgeous red long sword. The people gathered, regardless of gender, watched Grid with shining eyes. Then Grid...

"100,000 Army."

*Clink!*

On one side of the garden. He aimed at the trees and used a skill.

"Massacre Sword!"

"...!"

The dozens of maids and gardeners watching Grid were simultaneously shocked.

Their great king was talking about slaughtering 100,000 troops. They were all nervous about what type of swordsmanship would develop. The result?

*Hwiiiiing~~*

Nothing happened. The trees in front of Grid didn't have a single injury.

[100,000 Army Massacre Sword is a non-activated skill. It has failed.]

“ ... ”

Grid, the maids, and the gardeners were silent.

On this day. The rumor that Grid was a chuuni started to spread in the Overgeared Kingdom. 100,000 Army Massacre Sword. Starting with the name, the debut of the strongest skill was the worst.

◇ ◇ ◇

"Ah, it's seriously nasty."

Pagma's Swordsmanship increased his attack power and chances of a critical hit when deactivated. That's why Grid's basic attacks were strong. Grid was sincerely anticipating the power of 100,000 Army Swordsmanship combined with the passive function of Pagma's Swordsmanship. Yet he couldn't use it at all?

‘The mana consumption is really high, but what the hell is sword energy?’

Grid was forced to invest points in intelligence but his total mana was still less than 14,000. 100,000 Army Swordsmanship consumed 5,000 and 8,000 mana and this was a huge burden alone. It was painful that he needed one more unidentified resource.

‘Wow, shit... I have the fraudulent skill that causes 60% damage 30 times over a wide area and I can't use it... ’

It was psychologically painful. It felt like he was being tortured. The frustrated Grid

was suddenly reminded of Chris.

“Won’t Chris know about sword energy?”

After obtaining the title of Hero King, Grid opened a new resource called fighting energy. It was likely that sword energy was a resource for classes specializing in swordsmanship. And the 1st ranked Chris was a master of the greatsword. After joining Overgeared with the Giant Guild members and becoming a duke, he was one of the people that Grid most relied on.

Grid didn’t hesitate and went to find Chris.



Reidan.

A large city that was once the home of the Overgeared Guild, it was now called the second capital of the Overgeared Kingdom. The lord of this place was Chris. He was a player with a natural talent and a good mentor called Zirkan. He was once the leader of the Giant Guild that was part of the Seven Guilds and a strong person in Satisfy. In particular, his strength stat was high enough to overwhelm Grid. After acquiring his second class Tyrant, he had the ability to take away strength from surrounding targets and could exert a destructive power higher than Grid’s Enlightenment Sword.

Who would’ve imagined that the Canadian representative in Satisfy would one day join Grid? The world had been shocked the day Chris bowed to Grid during the founding ceremony. There were many voices shouting that Grid had caught Chris’ weakness and was threatening him.

But the reality was completely different. Chris acknowledged Grid and served Grid of his own free will. Chris was confident that he could be the best if he was with Grid. Anyway, the bottom line was that Chris liked Grid. Except when this happens.

"I also want to use sword energy."

“ ... ”

No, what type of nonsense did he come for? Chris was hunting in a vampire city when his concentration was shattered.



"Sword energy is a unique resource for swordsmen who have earned the title of great swordsman. How can you use it?"

*Sakak-!*

Chris attacked the true blood vampires on both sides. It was a truly excellent swordsmanship that inspired Grid. Grid felt a cool and stuffy emotion in his chest when he saw Chris' exciting swordsmanship after a long time.

"You really do know about sword energy. I need to obtain sword energy. How do I get it?"

*Puk.*

*Puuooook!*

*Kwaaaang!*

Grid struck the true blood vampire four times per second and then killed it with a black flame explosion. Chris was speechless for a moment.

"This is the rumored new sword?"

The power of Grid's sword was tremendous. Chris admired Grid, who grew by leaps and bounds in a few months.

"Didn't you reach 3rd on the rankings after clearing the Behen Archipelago and getting the title of Hero King?"

"I can't boast in front of the 1st ranked user."

"...Bah."

Chris knew. The throne that was 1st in the unified rankings could be taken away by Grid at any time. But Chris didn't feel bad or anxious. He already acknowledged Grid. He was ready to give the place to Grid at any time. Of course, he didn't intend for anyone other than Grid to take the seat.

"Did you gain a swordsmanship technique from the Behen Archipelago?"

The clever Chris immediately guessed Grid's situation. It was an incredible reasoning that impressed the dumb Grid.

"That's right. You are really impressive."

"In conclusion, sword energy is a resource that opens up only after reaching a certain level after becoming a great swordsman. And great swordsman is a title that can only be obtained if you have a swordsman type class. In other words, you absolutely can't obtain sword energy."

"..."

Grid's eyes twitched. He was hit with cold reality. He angrily used Pagma's Swordsmanship, Transcend. He slaughtered the vampires coming out of the darkness and gave a deep sigh.

"Then what should I do? I will never be able to use the skill that consumes sword energy?"

"It was originally like that. But it might be possible."

*Suuuuuok.* The 13th vampire city.

Elfin Stone who once ruled the city had been replaced by another true blood vampire. Grid and Chris. The two strongest of Overgeared had already reached the boss' room. The boss was furious at his sleep being disturbed and attacked the two. At this point, a blue energy rose from Chris' body like a haze.

"This is sword energy."

*Peeng!*

Chris' greatsword drew a blue line. It was an incomparably powerful blow that blew away the upper body of the 13th city's boss.

"Wow..."

Grid's eyes widened.

"The red energy around your body, is that the fighting energy gained after winning the

title of Hero King?”

Chris focused on Grid’s fighting energy.

“According to a quest I did in the past, Hero King was Muller’s title.”

“Sword Saint Muller...?”

“Yes. Muller would use sword energy and fighting energy. It means that fighting energy is a resource that can be used with swordsmanship. Why don’t you try replacing sword energy with fighting energy?”

“How?”

“...I’m not in a position to answer. You have to find the answer yourself.”

*Kwang!*

*Kwa kwa kwa kwang!*

[The owner of the 13th city, True Blood Vampire Ray has been destroyed.]

Grid and Chris had a lot of combat experience. They didn’t miss anything in the raid while talking and the result was amazing. The two of them captured the vampire city in the shortest time. Grid thought about it.

‘It might be time to challenge the next cities.’

Grid and the Overgeared Guild hadn’t challenged any new vampire cities because they feared the power of Vampire Duke Marie Rose and the other direct descendants. But now quite a lot of time had passed. Grid and the Overgeared members had all grown. Wouldn’t they be relatively safe as long as they didn’t meet Marie Rose?

“Um... I have to talk to Sticks about fighting energy. Thanks again, Chris. Level up.”

“You took away all my experience and now you are saying this...”

"Haha, sorry. Get in touch if you need me!"

Grid left the grumbling Chris behind and returned to Reinhardt. Chris smiled as he was left alone.

"I'm looking forward to the National Competition."

# Chapter 698

*Click.*

The lid of the diamond class Comet Group capsule quietly opened. The person who raised his body from inside was none other than Shin Youngwoo.

‘I now understand Piaro’s words from his days as a great swordsman.’

In the past, Piaro expressed that he had abandoned aura for sword energy. It seemed like an abstract concept in martial arts, so Grid hadn’t understood it at the time, but now it was clear.

‘At that time, Piaro acquired a new resource called sword energy. But due to his position as a NPC, it’s different to articulate the concept of a special resource.’

He didn’t know for certain why he had to leave aura. However, now it was possible to deduce to a certain degree.

‘There are skills that use sword energy as a resource and the power of these skills is much better than aura.’

Every person had different skills. In Piaro’s case, his aura related skills might be relatively weak. It didn’t make sense to have them grab his ankle when he was trying to be a sword saint.

“Huuk. Huuk.”

Youngwoo was moving continuously even while thinking. He stretched the body that had been trapped in the capsule, did one hundred push-ups and then one hundred pull-ups. A healthy mind would dwell in a healthy body. The reason Youngwoo logged out every six hours was to eat and to maintain his health.

‘If I didn’t exercise...’

His head would become even more like a stone and he would be frustrated every time he looked in the mirror. He felt good every time he exercised, allowing his mind to emit

a clear and positive energy.

‘...There are two ways I can approach sword energy.’

Youngwoo showered after his workout. He had jajangmyeon delivered for lunch then he put on a cardigan and sat in front of the garden pond. His disciplined body in the pond was nice enough to compare with athletes and his deeply thoughtful eyes were reminiscent of an actor.

‘First I need to figure out how to replace sword energy with fighting energy.’

In this case, he had to rely on Sticks. He couldn’t be sure how to use fighting energy but Sticks was still a sage. He might have clues for Youngwoo.

‘The second is to examine the sword with Piaro and Asmophel.’

There had to be a way of achieving the great swordsman title through training. Chris was convinced that great swordsman was a title unique to swordsman classes but Grid’s idea was different. Why? Pagma was a great swordsman.

‘A blacksmith and great swordsman...’

If it was possible for Pagma, it would be possible for him as well. Grid had faith, but he would rather find a way to exploit fighting energy than being a great swordsman. According to Chris, sword energy was a resource that opened at a certain level after becoming a great swordsman. In other words, it didn’t mean he would obtain sword energy if he became a great swordsman.

‘I might have to take great swordsman related quests for a few years.’

It had almost been two years in Satisfy time since Grid received Braham’s soul. But he only had a few magic spells available. It took a lot of time and effort to gain results in areas far from his class.

‘First of all, I want to use 100,000 Army Swordsmanship right now.’

It was a hidden skill that he obtained after suffering. To not be able to use it was painful.

‘If possible, I want to activate the skill before the National Competition.’

Grid was reminded of Chris, who he met after a long time. As he was growing, other people were also growing. Grid wanted to be more perfect and stronger in the National Competition. That's right. Grid had already decided to participate in the 3rd National Competition. It was because the propaganda effect was important.

'I have to stamp the majesty of the Overgeared King onto the world so that people will quickly gather in the Overgeared Kingdom.'

In the next National Competition.

'I need to be active and show my strength every time.'

Shin Youngwoo promised. But he didn't know. There was a video file on the Internet called 'Grid's Chunni Scene.avi'...



Grid was the best star of South Korea! His fan cafe membership now exceeded one million. There were many people who loved Grid and some of them had the stalker temperament. They wanted to see Grid occasionally and there was a female player who worked as a maid in the Overgeared Kingdom.

She was the culprit. As soon as she discovered that Grid had appeared in the palace, she turned on video recording mode and then Grid shouted 100,000 Army Massacre Sword.

"Haack, haack. Grid is so cute."

A wide back and shoulders like a swimmer. Sharp eyes without double eyelids. Such a manly person was doing such cute actions?

The woman in her early 20's, 'Min' replayed the video of Grid shouted 100,000 Army Massacre Sword at a tree several times. She was in ecstasy. Then she suddenly had a desire to share this video with other fans. It was purely to spread the appearance of the cute Grid. Thus, she finally uploaded the video to Grid's fan cafe.

The resulting ripple effect was large. The video of Grid shouting 100,000 Army Massacre Sword was spread by members of Grid's fan cafe to various SNS sites and communities.

*-100,000 Army Massacre Sword ㅋㅋㅋㅋㅋ Crazy ㅋㅋㅋㅋㅋ*

*-Having delusions of killing 100,000...*

*-No, no matter how delusional it is. Isn't the naming sense too low level? Isn't this childish skill name something an elementary school student would make up? Is Grid's mental age that low?*

*-Sigh, really. What mental age? You can play when you are alone.*

*-It's too different from what I see on broadcast. it is funny that he has caught the chuuni disease.*

*-Chuuni? Grid's life is one million times better than yours.*

*-It is funny that this video is controversial right now. Doesn't everyone know that Grid is a chuuni? If he was a normal person, will he be able to think up the names Overgeared Guild, Overgeared Kingdom, and Overgeared King? Aren't you all idiots?*

*-...*

People didn't know about the existence of a skill called 100,000 Army Massacre Sword. They had no choice but to label it Grid's naming sense. Of course, there were many people who purely enjoyed the video, such as members of Grid's fan cafe. The achievements that Grid showed were so diverse that it was extremely rare to see someone unconditionally envy and degrade Grid.



A beautiful peninsula that boasted a variety of climates, Lubana. It had already been 200 years since it became a territory of the Saharan Empire, but Lubana had great pride in its history and culture. It was natural, since it existed as an independent kingdom for approximately half a thousand years before Madra died.

But the people of Lubana were in pain. It was due to the discrimination of the mainland and the distorted education imposed by the empire. The people of Lubana had been constantly suppressed for the past 200 years and this resulted in great dissatisfaction with the empire.



At this time, a person who claimed to be the descendant of the Undefeated King appeared. He shouted.

‘I will free you.’

It was enough to tempt the already tired people of Lubana. The Lubana people responded to the descendant of the Undefeated King and rebelled against the empire. It was a movement for independence. The people of Lubana didn’t want to be discriminated against any longer. They wanted to live freely.

However, the empire didn’t tolerate their free will and dispatched troops. The descendant of the Undefeated King fought back.

“Pant... Pant...”

Oasis. He was an early user who had been playing since Satisfy opened. He always maintained a ranking within the top 10 million. 10 million out of two billion. It was certainly a high ranking. But the level was too vague to boast about. A person in the middle of mediocrity, that was Oasis.

Of course, Oasis was aware of this fact. He never once thought of himself as extraordinary, and celebrities such as Kraugel and Grid were always the subject of his longing. If only he was born with talent like Kraugel. If only he had good luck and the charm to attract people like Grid. He really didn’t know how many times he hoped and dreamt about this. They were ideal protagonists of a shonen manhwa. Just like most people, Oasis wanted to be a special person.

But reality was relentless and his everyday life was always ordinary. One day, an opportunity arrived for him. Due to his timid personality, he was always cautious. That’s why Oasis had never lost a fight. He had never been defeated or died when he came to Lubana as a second advancement class and found something.

An old sheath. It was an ego item with part of the ego of the Undefeated King.

*-There isn’t the aura of a loser or a master around you. In any case, you are undefeated. You are moderately interesting and curious. In the end, what type of master are you? I will check.*

Undefeated King Madra. A relatively unknown person compared to other legends because he was only active in Lubana during his lifetime. Oasis smiled the moment he

was chosen. It was due to the idea that ‘an ordinary person was chosen by a legend.’ Anyway, this was an opportunity for Oasis.

‘I will also become a legend.’

Would it be possible to work alongside Kraugel and Grid, who he had previously only seen from a distance? Could he also live like a protagonist in a movie? Oasis couldn’t miss this chance. He respectfully received the Undefeated King’s old sheath.

“I will believe and follow you. Please make me a master.”

He would become a master. If he was like Kraugel or Grid, he would’ve shouted this. But Oasis was just an extra. He couldn’t shout such a thing. He was desperate. After careful thought, he proceeded with a long quest from the old sheath that took a year. It was an opportunity he won with his own efforts, but Oasis couldn’t recognize this. He believed it was luck that this chance came to an ordinary person like him and tried not to miss it.

As a result, the old sheath gave him a choice. During the process of performing the class quest to become the Undefeated King’s Descendant, he took on the adventure of a lifetime. He waged war against the Saharan Empire. He who had always hidden in a safe place. He who had always given up dangerous adventures and quests.

He had hopes and dreams. After this adventure, he hoped to become the main character. But he soon realized.

‘A dream is just a dream...’

*Ku tang tang tang!*

It had been a long time since his vision started blinking red.

Oasis no longer resisted the knights. The passive super sensitivity and status resistance gained after becoming the Undefeated King’s Descendant candidate was still exercised, but his physical and mental strength were at their limits. The effect of the ‘infinite stamina’ and ‘10 times stats increase’ received from quest progress privilege was ineffective.

‘The reason I wasn’t defeated once after getting my second advancement class is...’

It was because he ran away. It wasn't because he fought and won in trials like the Undefeated King.

'I...'

He wasn't qualified. Oasis' heart acknowledged the awful reality. The dream he had in his heart was shattered. Surrounded by thousands of imperial troops, First Knight Mercedes approached him. A beautiful and expressionless woman. A big shot that the original Oasis would've never been able to face. There was no inspiration in her eyes as she gazed at Oasis.

"In the end, the rebels are suppressed. You have lost in your debut and are disqualified from being the Undefeated King's Descendant."

"...I never qualified in the first place."

Oasis silently closed his eyes. He had no fear about facing death for the first time, nor did he regret losing the opportunity to become the Undefeated King's Descendant. As he recalled the fact that pine needles should just eat pine needles, he prepared to return to his original place.

At that moment.

"Hey, young lady. Hasn't it been a while?"

Suddenly, Oasis heard a middle-aged man's voice. The power of the voice was so great that the eyes of thousands of soldiers headed in its direction. Oasis also reflexively turned his head. Then he saw it.

"God of War...?"

Ares. Another main character in the world like Kraugel and Grid. He appeared on the battlefield!

"I'm sorry, but I have to take the baby Undefeated King with me."

"You...!"

Mercedes's expressionless face distorted for the first time. She hated Ares, who dared to go against the empire and set up his own kingdom. His existence itself couldn't be

tolerated. Scott and Luck appeared on her left and right. Each of them shot their ultimate skills.

Ares didn't miss this gap. He led the 50,000 troops of Valhalla. Now there was a significant rise in his stats. As the head of the army, he broke through the imperial army and ran to Oasis.

"You're the undefeated king? You must be the undefeated king! Isn't that right? Kelkel!"

"..."

Ares on a giant horse wasn't comparable to a normal person. He looked as big as a giant. This was the presence of a main character. The thrilled Oasis grabbed Ares' hand.

# Chapter 699

[You have left the event map! The war is considered to be lost!]

[The Undefeated King's class change quest has failed!]

[All stats are restored to their normal values. The stamina maintenance passive is destroyed.]

[The appreciation of the Undefeated King's old sheath has greatly reduced.]

*-A loser. You only maintained your life. You didn't exceed my expectations. How disappointing.*

“...”

Destroy the Red Knights within 22 days before the First Knight arrives on the battlefield. This was the content of the Undefeated King's class change quest that Oasis received. But he failed. The battlefield was set to 'no players except the quest host can enter' until First Knight Mercedes appeared. Oasis alone experienced despair and frustration.

'I can't do it.'

Oasis was a balance type warrior who invested equally in stamina, strength, and agility. Due to the quest benefits, his stats increased by 10 times. Oasis thought there was a chance when his strength, stamina, and agility all exceeded 1,000. As he looked at the enemy forces turned grey under his sword, he finally believed he had become the protagonist of the world.

However, he was mistaken. It wasn't a solo number knight, but from the 15th knight, Oasis' soldiers were tied up by the Red Knights and collapsed. From this time on, Oasis was completely neutralized by the enemy offensive pouring in. Every time he stretched out his sword, he received dozens of counterattacks, lost his balance, and failed to attack. Now he was in a state where he couldn't move his hands.

'If only I had my third advancement class.'

The stats awakening from his third advancement would've maximized the 10 times stats increase. In addition, his resistance would increase greatly and the probability of resisting status conditions would rise. This would allow him to use a wider variety of skills in active fighting.

'All the Red Knights have their third advancement and the solo number knights have their fourth advancement. This fight is too disadvantageous to me. I only have my second advancement class. No... These are all excuses!'

He hadn't been able to finish his third advancement because he lacked ability. Even if he did have it, he would've been overwhelmed by the solo knights. In particular, the Fifth Knight was a different dimension. He still got goosebumps when he thought about the talents of the solo number knights.

"Hey! Cheer up!"

*Slap!*

Oasis was busy thinking on Ares' horse. All of a sudden, his back was hit, almost making him fall. Ares cast a deep shadow on his face as he gave Oasis a big smile.

"I have already investigated you. Aren't you only at your second advancement? It's great that you gained the power of a legend and dealt with the monstrous empire alone. It's really amazing. You did what none of us could. Isn't this a talented person?"

"...The reason I was able to survive without dying was thanks to the quest benefits. In the end, I failed the quest and am far from becoming a legend. How am I talented? It's ridiculous. I'm just an ordinary person."

Oasis' voice was weak as he spoke. He gave a sad smile like he was despising himself.

"Failure is natural. How can I inherit a legendary power that I'm not qualified for in the first place? Unless I'm a genius like you... I'm glad to meet you on this quest. No, it's an honor. I no longer have any wishes."

"You punk!"

*Peok!*

“Keok!”

Oasis shrieked as Ares once again hit him on the back. Ares’ back hit contained enough power to threaten the life of Oasis, whose level was in the mid-200s. Considering that Ares was currently leading 50,000 troops, he was much greater than someone in the top 10 million rankings. It was possible for Ares to beat and kill Oasis with bare hands.

But Ares didn’t think of Oasis as trivial. He felt pure respect.

“Can a person with no qualifications really have a chance to become a legend? You, aren’t you unnecessarily modest? Haha!”

“...I was just lucky.”

“What? Luck? Puhahat! Look back. If you were just eating and playing around, how could you get in touch with the Undefeated King?”

“ ... ”

"It isn’t luck, but skill. If you were napping, then you wouldn’t have formed a connection with the Undefeated King.”

“...Why are you doing this to me? Isn’t it enough for someone like you to help me personally? Now you’re comforting me. What do you want? There’s nothing I can do for you.”

"Eh? Are you really asking that question? Of course it’s because I like you. I came running here in order to scout you.”

"Scout...? You have made a big mistake. I’m not the descendant of the Undefeated King. I was just a candidate. Now I’ve failed the class change quest. Your expectations have been disappointed...”

"You really are speaking a lot. Let’s go to Valhalla first. I’ve created a specialty Coke. Valhalla is the only area where you can drink Coke in Satisfy. Haha! Let’s discuss our relationship while enjoying the delicious carbonated drink! Hiyah!"

“H-Hey!”

Oasis was very embarrassed. No, to be exact, he was afraid. Ares clearly understood

that he misinterpreted Oasis as the Undefeated King's descendant. He would feel disgusted and furious once he knew the truth and send Oasis away. As they rode on the wild horse, Ares whispered to him.

"I don't intend to put a burden on you just because I have expectations. I don't want to ask anything from you. I'm just curious."

There was a big smile on Ares' mouth.

"I just want to make contact with you, one of the few great people in the world who met a legend."

"..."

One of the few great people in the world. This filled Oasis' heart. He realized something. He was someone who had already become special.

'Everybody is strong...'

As you live a hard and repetitive life everyday, don't give up hope. Don't forget that you are the hero of your own life.

Thanks to Ares, Oasis was filled with courage.



"Ares has taken in the Undefeated King's descendant."

The killing god Faker. Despite having a normal class, he won against the sun-grade Black in a one on one match with his talent and efforts. He reported to Lael, master of the Overgeared Shadows.

"The Ares Army helped the Undefeated King's descendant, who failed in his rebellion."

The timing of Ares' appearance in Lubana was terrible. Lael nodded at the report.

"The Undefeated King's descendant asked for help from Valhalla as well as the Overgeared Kingdom. Ares accepted it."

It wasn't a good situation. If the two people established a trusting relationship, then



the power of Valhalla could grow rapidly.

'If the descendant of the Undefeated King joins Ares' army... '

It caused goosebumps just imagining it. But Lael laughed.

"Well, I don't think it will happen."

At this moment, Lael was sure of it.

"The descendant of the Undefeated King is a fake."

Madra got the title of Undefeated King because he had never been defeated. It didn't make sense that his descendant would be defeated during his debut. It was likely that he lost the qualification to be the Undefeated King's descendant when he lost the war. No, he might not have been qualified in the first place.

'Not just anyone can inherit the power of a legend. Ares, you've made a mistake. You're wasting your time. Kukuk.'

Lael was filled with joy the moment he discovered that the descendant of the Undefeated King was a fake. It was because he thought there was a possibility that Grid would be reborn as the Undefeated King. That's right. Lael had heard from Sticks. In the Behen Archipelago, Grid had obtained the hidden item called the Undefeated King's Diary.

'After Pagma and Braham, it's now the power of the Undefeated King.'

Maybe Grid would become a mythical entity beyond a legend. Lael was full of expectations. But was it that easy?



"If Grid completely reads the diary, will he become the Undefeated King's descendant?"

The S.A. Group headquarters was busy with preparations for the 3rd National Competition. However, Yoon Nahee's work was nothing new. As Satisfy's operations manager, her duty was to observe the users. Chairman Lim Cheolho shook his head at Yoon Nahee's question.

"It's impossible for Grid to become the descendant of the Undefeated King. The Undefeated King's descendant can only be someone who has never been defeated."

"..."

Not being defeated even once? It was impossible for a player. It was a class change that had unrealistic difficulty. Yoon Nahee was relieved, since she had worried that Grid would monopolize the legendary classes.

"Only."

Lim Cheolho smiled in a meaningful manner.

"It doesn't stop him from inheriting some of the power. He's qualified. It is just like how Agnus recently received a technique from one of the five pillars of the empire."

"Agnus... It's more like a scam than a technique."

"Is that so? Hahaha!"

"..."

The five miracle players who messes up the predictions of the supercomputer Morpheus. Three of them were Kraugel, Grid, and Agnus, and Chairman Lim Cheolho had a great affection for them. He was always happy when talking about them. Yoon Nahee understood his mind to some extent.

The actions of the five miracle players were always unexpected and observing it from the perspective of a third party was fun.



"Sticks!"

After the Behen Archipelago was cleansed, Sticks immediately returned to the Overgeared Academy as the principal. He gave the students effective instructions and enabled them to grow into talented individuals who would be a help to the kingdom.

Now Grid came to visit the busy Sticks. He unabashedly demanded. "Tell me how to replace sword energy with fighting energy!"

Sticks asked with confusion.

"I can tell you, but don't you already know?"

"...?"

What was this reaction? Sticks stared at the flustered Grid.

"Did you never try to use fighting energy after you obtained it?"

"Eh? Y-Yes... Then?"

He hunted the vampires while talking to Chris. However, he hadn't used fighting energy. In the first place, he didn't have the concept of 'using' fighting energy. Fighting energy was a resource that strengthened his stats as the number increased. Therefore, he thought that he would just experience a rise in attack power in combat.

"...Go to the hunting ground. After building up fighting energy, try using swordsmanship."

"..."

Judging by Sticks' reaction, Grid must've done something stupid. He started sweating.

"Surely fighting energy isn't a resource that can be used naturally after it reaches a certain level?"

No way, it was impossible. Grid shook his head and ran to the hunting ground.

# Chapter 700

Grid's gameplay approach was unique. His way of approaching the game was different to the average person and frankly speaking, it wasn't very good. What if a typical player had received the title of Hero King?

First of all, they would study the resource called fighting energy. How did fighting energy rise, what was the effect of the rising fighting energy, the penalty if fighting energy fell below 10, etc. They would try to adapt to the newly acquired resource quickly in order to fully utilize it.

But Grid was different. The effect of fighting energy was listed in the detailed information so Grid accepted it and didn't feel the need to analyze it. So what about the penalty that occurred when fighting energy fell below 10? In any case, fighting energy was always kept at 10, so he wasn't worried about it. He thought he would discover it gradually.

In the end, Grid focused on Madra after cleansing the Behen Archipelago. Due to Madra's strength and Grid's gratitude, it was natural to think of Madra above anything else. He didn't care about the fighting energy resource until he read the diary and got Madra's swordsmanship.

This showed how emotional Grid was. If Grid was a user of a regular game, he would be wasting his life. Fortunately, Satisfy placed high importance on NPCs, and it was ironic that this unique gaming approach was Grid's strength.

"Hmmm."

The beginner hunting ground near Reinhardt. The place with monsters below level 10 was where Lord used to visit as a baby. In a peaceful place where a few beginners and woodcutters could be seen, Grid struck a passing deer.

*Peok!*

Of course, Grid killed the deer. Grid's sword struck four times per second and it died on the first hit, the remaining three only hitting empty air.

“Kuoong...”

Grid's expression became rotten. He had already hunted 20 deer but his fighting energy didn't budge from 10 points.

‘Look back at my memories.’

He had hunted the vampires while talking to Chris. He had killed a few ordinary vampires and true blood vampires but his fighting energy didn't go up at all. Grid was certain of it after hunting a few more deer.

‘My fighting energy won't go up if I fight a weak opponent. It will be easier to manage my fighting energy if I determine the exact criteria of weakness.’

Grid judged and moved hunting grounds. He moved sequentially from a low difficulty to high difficulty place, slaughtering monsters by type. In the process, he summoned the Overgeared Skeletons to help them grow. The result?

‘If I fight against monsters 30 levels lower than me, fighting energy will never go up.’

Grid had to fight at least level 326 monsters for his fighting energy to rise.

‘On the other hand, I think that fighting energy will rise rapidly for opponents that have a higher level than me.’

There was a basis for this analysis. The higher the level of the monster, the faster fighting energy will rise.

‘For monsters 10 levels lower than me, hitting them 10 times will increase fighting energy by one. For the same level monster, hitting them eight times will increase it by one. Hrmm...’

Fighting energy was a tricky resource. It only accumulated when he hit an enemy or allowed an enemy attack. If Grid or the other side avoided or defended against the attack, there was no influence on fighting energy. Grid's expression became more and more rotten.

He was upset when he thought about this fighting energy formula being applied to players. Grid was third on the unified rankings. Out of two billion players, there were only two with an official higher level than him.

‘Anyway, I can’t use it actively in PvP’

Most of the enemies that Grid would compete against in the 3rd National Competition would be at least 30 levels lower than Grid. Then fighting energy was a resource that couldn’t be used.

"Dammit."

Hero King. It was a title that was only useful against the strong in many ways. He couldn’t say it was bad because it conditionally exerted the best effect, but he also felt regret.

*Kiyaaaaaaah!*

Grid analyzed fighting energy and grumbled. A feminine monster with hair that wriggled like a snake appeared. It was the emergence of the degraded medusa, who froze a target when their eyes met.

‘I ended up walking to Rock Forest.’

Rock Forest. It was a thick forest filled with rocks. It was considered the hardest hunting ground near Reinhardt, so there were almost no users. This was because it was very difficult to deal with the degraded medusa, who appeared in large numbers.

It was a hunting ground where the party needed at least 80% petrification resistance as well as a member of the Rebecca Church. Users couldn’t dream of solo play at all. Of course, Grid was the exception.

[You have made eye contact with the degraded medusa! You have been petrified.]

[You have resisted.]

[You have made eye contact...]

[You have resisted.]

[You have resisted.]

{You have res...}

“????”

The five medusae surrounding Grid were very confused. The stupid humans would freeze to stone when their gazes met. Grid flew towards them with the God Hands and used Wave.

[You have dealt 25,900 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 28,100...]

‘This is honey.’

The level of the degraded medusa was 350. They were classified as an elite monster and gave good experience to Grid. In addition, as a status condition monster, their physical ability was weaker than general elite monsters. Grid was able to build up fighting energy quickly by defeating them. Along the way, he wore Malacus’ Cloak in order to hunt quickly.

[Fighting energy has reached 20 points.]

He was fighting monsters at a similar level to him so fighting energy rose quickly. The purple aura, which could be seen as red depending on the angle, rose steadily from Grid’s body.

[You have dealt 32,700 damage to the target!]

As fighting energy rose, Grid's attack power became more powerful. His hunting speed became faster as time passed.

'Whoops.'

Grid was reminded of his original purpose while destroying the medusae in Rock Forest. He confirmed that fighting energy reached 50 and opened the skills window.

"...Go to the hunting ground. After building up fighting energy, try using swordsmanship."

Sticks' meaningful words repeated in Grid's mind.

[100,000 Army Blockade Sword (Degraded) Lv. 1]

It deals 20% damage to all enemies visible in your field of view and deals 3 seconds of the 'blockade' effect. The targets that are blocked can't move and their use of skills and magic is blocked.

Skill Resource Consumption: 5,000 mana, 20 sword energy.

Skill Cooldown Time: 30 minutes.

\* The skill has activated due to acquiring the fighting energy resource.

[100,000 Army Massacre Sword (Degraded) Lv. 1]

Deals 60% of your attack power 30 times to everyone (can't distinguish between friend or foe) in a 10 metre radius.

Skill Resource Consumption: 8,000 mana, 50 sword energy.

Skill Cooldown Time: 10 minutes.

\* The skill has activated due to acquiring the fighting energy resource.



“...Crazy.”

Once fighting energy reached a certain level, it would be naturally converted to the skill resource. Grid fell into shame.

‘I could’ve solved this easily if I checked fighting energy from the beginning!’

He had just been worrying alone. The waste of time was also great. Grid was forced to regret his own foolishness. He was ashamed of himself.

“Kuooock... I’m angry.”

Grid took out his anger on the innocent medusae! He used Quick Movements and started striking the medusa.

*Kiyak!*

*Kyak!*

The screams of the medusa, a synonym of fear for ordinary players, echoed in Rock Forest.

[Fighting energy has reached 70 points.]

Finally, Grid gathered all the resources needed for 100,000 Army Swordsmanship.

“Fly.”

*Paang!*

Grid didn’t delay. He wore Braham’s Boots and flew high in the sky.

"8, 14... 20, 32..."

Grid could see over 30 medusae from the sky. They smelt blood while roaming Rock Forest and kept on gathering. A wicked smile appeared on Grid’s face. He followed the

tone of the Undefeated King.

“Look. This is my dance.”

*Kuoooooh!*

Around Grid’s body, the purple aura started to stir like a storm. The effect was so gaudy that Grid’s shape couldn’t be discerned with the naked eye.

"100,000 Army."

Grid’s sharp eyes brightened among the violet storm. Grid moved his sword.

“Blockade Sword.”

*Peeng!*

*Pepepepeok!*

A festival was unfolding. A purple storm of fighting energy rained down from Grid’s sword like firecrackers. The target was all the medusae on the ground. Every target in Grid’s ‘sight’ was hit by the fighting energy.

*Kiik!*

*Kuaaaaaah!*

The attack power of 100,000 Army Blockade Sword wasn’t so good. The medusae struck by the firecrackers of fighting energy didn’t suffer much physical damage. The problem was the blockage. It was the worst CC skill that blocked movement, skills, and magic for up to three seconds. The medusa became as solid as stone statues. The medusa, who were accustomed to turning people into stone statues, were confused by the reversed situation.

"100,000 Army."

Grid descended to the ground.

“Massacre Sword.”

Death!

*Chukak.*

*Chukakakakak!*

30 attacks per second. The target was the medusa right in front of Grid and all medusa in a 10 meter radius.

*Peng!*

*Pepepepeok!*

Splash, splash, a feast of splash damage! Black flames exploded around the medusa in Rock Forest.

[You have dealt 15,380 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 16,900 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt 18,700 damage to the target!]

[You have dealt...]

There were two main reasons why Grid favored Link since making the Enlightenment Sword. First, the high number of strikes meant the probability of the black flames activating would increase. Second, the effect of increasing damage every time an attack hit the same target was fully applied. In other words, once Link hit the target, Grid's attack power instantly increased by 100%. But 100,000 Army Massacre Sword shone even more. All targets in its range received 30 stikes, so all of them had a 100% increase of Grid's attack power.

“Kuk...! Kuhahahahat!”

Bliss! Pleasure!!

Grid eventually burst out laughing. On one side of his field of view, the damage notification windows were updated several hundreds times. He dealt 30 hits to dozens of enemies at once, so the update notification windows appeared at the speed of light.

"The finishing touch...!"

Grid controlled the thrill of this hunt! Just as he was about to finish off the dying medusa, he suddenly flinched.

[Fighting energy has dropped to 0.]

[A penalty has occurred. Fighting energy won't recover for 10 minutes and all stats will drop by 50%.]

"Crazy..."

In fact, the reason why Grid used the skills after only securing 70 fighting energy was to try out the penalty. He judged the medusa to be suitable test subjects. Of course, he never imagined that the penalty would be so severe when making the decision.

*Kyaoooooh!*

"H-Hik...!"

All stats dropped by 50%! It was impossible to deal with dozens of medusae in this state, even for Grid. Grid was also still wearing Malacus' Cloak so the medusae were constantly gathering.

"G-God Hands! Noe! Randy! Overgeared Skeletons!" Grid turned pale as he hurriedly took off the cloak and summoned his pets. Noe and Randy didn't even get a chance to greet him after a long time. "Distract them while I run away!"

"..."

Hell's best demonic beast, a memphis' learning abilities were excellent. As he served Grid, who once used to be verbally abusive, he learned to speak various things. But

Noe never once cursed. A noble being like him shouldn't meet an opponent that would make him forget his dignity and let out low-grade profanity. But he let one loose at this moment.

"My damn master..."

"..."



PDF by: traitorAIZEN